Germany's Violations of the Laws of War 1914-15

2.25.16.

Library of the Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.

Presented by Sir Gilbert Parker.

Division D626

Section .G3F81

GERMANY'S VIOLATIONS OF THE LAWS OF WAR

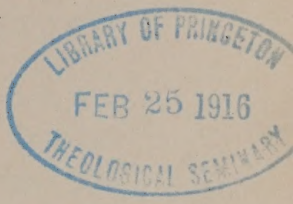
1914–15

France. Ministère des affaires étrangères.

GERMANY'S VIOLATIONS OF THE LAWS OF WAR

1914–15

COMPILED UNDER THE AUSPICES
OF THE FRENCH MINISTRY
OF FOREIGN AFFAIRS



TRANSLATED AND WITH AN INTRODUCTION
BY

J. O. P. BLAND

WITH FACSIMILES OF DOCUMENTS

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS
NEW YORK AND LONDON
The Knickerbocker Press
1915

COPYRIGHT, 1915
BY
G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS

The Knickerbocker Press, New York

INTRODUCTION TO THE ENGLISH EDITION

IN compiling and publishing the present work, the French Government aims at bringing into full relief the fact with which, above all others, the Powers will have to deal hereafter, when they come to the discussion of the new frontiers and the terms of peace; namely, that as a matter of deliberate and predetermined policy the German Government and the German army have persistently sanctioned the systematic violation of the Geneva and Hague Conventions. It is this all-important fact, herein set forth and proved, which completely justifies the Allies in their proclaimed determination not to sheathe the sword nor to listen to any proposals of mediation, until the power of German militarism shall have been finally overthrown. It is the object of the French Government, by irrefutable evidence, to bring home this vital fact so forcibly to the public conscience of neutral States, that they, in common with the Allies, may realize that there can never be a peace worthy of the name, nor any hope of the attainment of humanitarian ideals, until the intolerable domination of Junkerdom

has been utterly destroyed. The documents which have been brought together in this book prove beyond all possibility of doubt that the German Government has, on the one hand, repeatedly pledged itself to uphold philanthropic conventions agreed upon by the Powers at The Hague and to respect the rights thereby reserved to neutral States, while, on the other, it has deliberately prepared to wage war—to quote its own words—"by all methods which promote the attainment of its object, subject only to such restraints as it imposes on itself in its own interest." What those restraints have been the world has seen with ever-increasing horror. The unspeakable cruelties practised upon defenceless civilians; the ill-treatment of prisoners; the killing of wounded men upon the field of battle; the attacks on unarmed ships, neutral as well as enemies; the firing upon the Red Cross and upon British sailors engaged in the rescue of Germans; the sinking of the *Lusitania;* the bombardment of undefended towns; the poisoning of wells and the use of asphyxiating gas and vitriol; all these and other unspeakable things have taught the world to perceive the nature of the blood-and-iron civilization which victorious Germany would have imposed upon Europe. They have proved that if the wars of the future are by any means to be redeemed from utter barbarism, if humanitarian principles are by any means to be made an effective restraint upon those who appeal to force, Germany must be

brought in penitential garb before the tribunal of the nations and convicted of her treacherous perjury. And conviction must be followed by stern punishment meted out to her rulers and responsible agents.

The collective intelligence and philanthropy of civilized nations, recorded in the several conventions of The Hague and in the international laws of war, have never attempted to base any definite hopes upon the Utopian vision of a world in which wars shall cease to be waged as part of the eternal struggle for existence. But they have unanimously assumed, and the Powers through their representative statesmen have declared, their desire and their intention, "within the measure of their ability, of mitigating the evils inseparable from war, of suppressing its useless hardships, and of ameliorating the lot of wounded soldiers on the field of battle." To those intentions Germany has solemnly subscribed; nevertheless, waging a war of her own choosing, she has ruthlessly and systematically ignored them. Not by the independent acts of undisciplined individuals, not as the result of misunderstandings or in the heat of fierce passions evoked in battle, but by the cold-blooded premeditation of general orders, prepared for the army in time of peace, by the deliberate adoption of methods of barbarism which civilization has denounced, the German nation stands to-day forsworn at the bar of international justice, a pariah among the nations. The evidence which the French Government has brought

together and published in this book makes the shameful indictment complete. It includes little which impartial opinion can ascribe to the passion or prejudice of hostile witnesses. Most of these documents, it will be observed, are of German origin; they deal only with the war on land and with Germany's flagrant violations, by order of responsible authority, of her definite pledges recorded in Treaties and in the Conventions of The Hague. On the one side, these pledges are textually reproduced; on the other, the time, place, and manner of their violation. The reader will find herein no elaborate weaving of arguments, no sensational appeal to the emotions, no fine writing or *ex parte* pleading; nothing but a methodical statement of damning facts, supported in most cases by the evidence of German witnesses and German documents. Where documents of non-German origin are given, their evidence is generally of a nature to confirm the German admissions in specific cases by means of the official reports of the examination under oath of eye-witnesses.

Devoid of all sensationalism and circumstantial evidence, this method of framing the indictment of civilization against Germany has appealed to the French Government as best calculated to create an intelligent force of dispassionate opinion abroad, and hereafter to convince even the disillusioned German people of the heinousness of the crimes committed in their name by the German Government and by the Moloch of

militarism to which they have sacrificed their first-born, as part of a deliberately planned system of ruthless warfare. It would have been an easy matter to aggravate the indictment, to place on record the sworn testimony of countless victims of the cruelty and lust of individual Germans in Belgium and Northern France. It would have been easy to give chapter and verse to prove innumerable instances in which Germany has violated her solemn pledges in regard to the restricted use of mines at sea, to the protection of non-combatants, and to her proclaimed intention "to serve the interests of humanity and to lessen the rigours and disasters of war." But the French Government, clearly perceiving the importance of the psychological factor, has confined itself to a clear line of direct indictment and carefully avoided all debatable side-issues.

This procedure has been followed for two reasons. Firstly, because it is realized that the German Government, having organized the dissemination of falsehood as a department of State, having made barefaced mendacity a branch of its public service, will not hesitate for a moment to repudiate and deny, as malicious inventions of the enemy, such proofs of German barbarism as may be produced either by its victims or by sympathetic witnesses. It will undoubtedly deny the evidence of impartial neutrals wheresoever unpalatable to Germany, and it will endeavour to divert the world's attention from horrors such as have been revealed in

the Report of Lord Bryce's Committee by indicting violent countercharges of barbarism against the Allies. Neither the Press Bureau nor the State-fed Professors of Berlin will hesitate to give publicity to any falsehood which may appear to them calculated to serve their purposes at home and abroad. By recklessly multiplying their accusations, by ascribing to individual Belgians or Frenchmen actual or imaginary offences against the laws of war, and by boldly denying the unlawfulness of their own proceedings, they will endeavour to create confusion of the main issue and to cause the vital fact to be forgotten, that the outrages committed by Germans are essentially different from those which may be alleged or proved against other belligerents, in that they are not the result of individual initiative but of a State-ordered and systematic policy. Secondly, it is realized that the public mind, especially in neutral countries, has been surfeited with charges and countercharges of inhuman cruelties; that, in every war, the ever-increasing tension of hostility tends to create on both sides, especially amongst non-combatants, a type of acute sensibility, in which imagination becomes stimulated to an extraordinary degree. Furthermore, public opinion in neutral countries is unmistakably sensible of the fact that the Press, and sometimes the politicians, of the belligerent countries are instinctively disposed to stimulate enthusiasm for their national cause and a martial spirit by sensational accusations of

barbarism. In every war such charges and counter-charges are continually made, and they naturally become embittered as the struggle proceeds. At the beginning of the present war, the German Press lashed its credulous readers into a state of passionate indignation by fabricated accounts of the mutilation of wounded Germans by the Belgians. Similarly at the outset, in France, the wrath of the army and of civilians was fanned to white heat by the dissemination of stories, unsupported by reliable evidence, of the cutting off of children's hands and of eye-gouging by the Germans. Heaven knows that, in the cold-blooded atrocities actually committed by official orders, the Germans have supplied ample ground for fertile seeds of hatred and revenge; but the effect of these sensational excesses of excited imagination, while producing among the belligerents a natural tendency to individual reprisals, has been to create in neutral countries a certain reaction of scepticism and a general suspicion of all accusations that are not supported by strictly impartial evidence. At a time when public opinion in the belligerent countries is naturally most sensitive to "mass-suggestions" of hatred, it is realized by those who have no part or lot in the struggle that exaggerations and suppressions of fact on both sides are inevitable.

This being so, the French Government has compiled its present indictment of Germany's methods of waging war, dispensing as far as possible with the evidence of

interested or friendly witnesses. Its object is to convict the German Government of calculated bad faith, and the German army of criminal outrages, by the evidence of their own recorded words and deeds. Even the best trained official liars will find it difficult to explain away the record of barbarism left by German soldiers in documents which the French Government holds at the disposal of the neutral Powers.

And what good purpose, it may be asked, will be served by the framing and proving of this indictment? Evidently, so long as Germany remains undefeated, there can be no effective redress for these outrages, nor any means of compelling her to respect the principles of justice and humanity. Until she is utterly broken and repentant, there can be no safety for the lives and property of non-combatants by land or by sea. Unchecked by any of the humane considerations which have been embodied in the laws of civilized States, she will continue to apply all her murderous inventions to purposes of indiscriminate destruction. Nothing but her final defeat will convince her of the criminal folly of her barbarous methods of warfare. But the object which the French Government has in view, looking to the end of the war and, far beyond it, to the re-establishment of European civilization, upon foundations more lasting than those of the past, is to convince the world at large that there can never be any protective virtue in international Conventions unless and until

all civilized nations unite in stern condemnation of the insensate militarism which Germany represents. By proving that the spirit which animates this type of militarism is utterly destitute of every principle of chivalry and decency, it hopes to create and to solidify against it so strong a force of universal censure, that humanity may henceforward be protected against all possibility of its revival. It hopes to demonstrate the truth that all the philanthropic Conventions of The Hague are nothing worth unless henceforth their strict observance shall be held to be a matter of immediate interest and national honour to every country which has ratified them, and that none who profess and call themselves Christians shall be justified in remaining idle spectators of their wanton violation.

Too long the world has suffered the heavy burden of Germany's insatiate ambition and her ruthless application of brutal force to serve its avowed ends of conquest and spoliation. Too long has humanity lulled itself in the belief that the devastating methods pursued by the Prussians in 1870 had been definitely relegated to the past and that, despite their unceasing preparations for war, the German people might be trusted to abide by the solemn pledges which bound them to abstain from flagrant excesses of cruelty towards non-combatants and savage ill-treatment of prisoners and wounded men. By the testimonyof a cloud of witnesses, we now know that the spirit of the Hun of today is the same

merciless spirit which deliberately planned the outrages inflicted upon the civilian population of France forty-five years ago. If anything, it has since then become more brutally arrogant, more cynically contemptuous of the rights of individuals and the laws of nations.

Let it not be forgotten that the Conferences of the nations at The Hague and the Conventions thereby established were prompted in the first instance by a world-wide condemnation of the outrages which the relentless Prussian conquerors had inflicted upon the non-combatant population of France in 1870. They were an expression of the civilized world's deep sense of pity for the innocent victims of war and of its desire to mitigate the hardships of their lot in future. The rules of warfare laid down (and subscribed to by Germany) in the several Hague Conventions embody, in fact, a consensus of international opinion that the methods of warfare practised by Germany against France constituted a crime against civilization and the fundamental instincts of humanity. It is important in determining the future attitude of the Powers towards Germany and her rulers, to bear in mind the fact that her savage brutality in the present war and her persistent violation of Treaties, are the inevitable results of a military system and a political code deliberately adopted and systematically inculcated for the past fifty years. Whilst professing humanitarian ideals and pledging herself to wage war in accordance with

civilized usage, she has been steadily preparing to wage it even more barbarously than in 1870, unrestrained by any laws of God or man.

Sir Edward Hamley, in a letter published by the *Times* in January, 1871, described the methods which Germany had pursued to terrorize and devastate the territories of France, and suggested the necessity of international legislation to "mitigate the severities which a relentless conqueror might inflict." The following extract from his letter is worthy of reproduction today:

"The 'laws of war,' as promulgated by the Prussians, may be condensed in the case of invasion into the general axiom that the population of the invaded country lose their rights of property and of personal security, while the persons and effects of the invaders become absolutely sacred. In practice, this takes the two distinct forms of the law of requisition and the law of penalty for resistance. Every species of movable property which any district held by the invader contains, is subject to the demands of the commander of the troops that occupy it. This property is liable to be transported to particular points by the horses and vehicles of the inhabitants, which always form an important item in the booty. The penalty for non-compliance or tardy compliance with a requisition, is a pecuniary fine. For the payment of this, the chief inhabitants are seized as hostages. The town or village, the inhabitants of which protect their property,

is to be burnt. The town or village, in which invading troops have suffered themselves to be surprised, is to be burnt. The district in which damage is done to bridges, roads, or railways, is to be fined or devastated. The inhabitants who do the damage are to be put to death. Everybody taken with arms and not wearing a recognized uniform is to be put to death. All these things, are they not written in the orders issued by Prussian chiefs, and have not these orders been punctually executed?

"In ordinary cases, to confiscate property by force, to burn buildings and stores, and to put people to death, for reasons such as those quoted, are acts bearing names which need not be mentioned. It is difficult to say why these acts should lose their character if committed by invaders. And it is to be observed that the enforcement of these laws of war is not merely the annulling of ordinary law, but the inversion of it. For whereas a man in all peaceful countries is entitled and encouraged to defend his own property and person, while he who assails them does so at his own proper risk, in this case defence suddenly becomes a crime, to be visited by the extremest penalties, and it is the aggressor who is to be protected by laws of extraordinary severity. . . .

"That placid and home-loving race, which the world believed to be intent chiefly on philosophic dreams, now appears as insatiable of blood and dominion as the First Napoleon. . . .

"If it be asked how the excesses of a conqueror who commands such toleration and respect are to be restrained, I answer—not by dwelling chiefly on the tri-

umphs of his arms and ignoring the path which he has trod to them, but by proclaiming loudly that the system of warfare pursued is a detestable anachronism; that an ineffaceable stigma attaches to the army which practises and the nation which sanctions it, and that the 'honourable peace' which the Prussian Monarch desires is hardly possible with Paris burning at his feet and France ruined behind him. Is he not a conqueror of the kind of whom we have heard of old, 'who would make a solitude and call it peace'?"

It is the purpose of the present work to show that these barbarous methods of devastation, forsworn and forbidden to-day by international agreement, have been pursued with aggravated intensity by the German army and the German Government as part of their "hacking through" policy in the present war, and that the stigma which attached to them in 1870 is today increased a thousand-fold. In recognition of this fact, the Premier of Great Britain has now solemnly pledged his word that full reparation will eventually be exacted from all persons, whatever their position, who can be shown to have been responsible for these violations of the fundamental usages of civilized warfare. The evidence which has been collected in this book is chiefly intended to prove the direct responsibility of the German War Lord and his General Staff for these crimes, as well as the blood-guiltiness of specified individual officers. It is hoped and believed that the nature of this evidence

and the enormity of the crimes recorded will make it impossible hereafter for any short-sighted sentimentalists in our midst, or in neutral countries, to obtain a hearing when they advocate a policy of gentle magnanimity and kindly consideration towards the nation which has thus outraged the conscience of the civilized world. The present war will not end war; it will not kill the instincts of militarism in Europe or in Asia. All we can work and hope for is to make the world a better place to live in and the profession of arms a nobler calling, by the utter destruction of the type of militarism which has been created and maintained by Prussia's Junkerdom.

But this destruction can never be completely achieved by force of arms alone. It must be sought rather in the stimulation of a higher type of national conscience, a clearer recognition of the fundamental rights and duties of the individual citizen, and this not only in Germany, where the disease of Junkerdom has taken its deepest roots, but in every civilized country which professes to set an example to the "lesser breeds without the law." Only by a systematic process of education can the principles embodied in The Hague Conventions become a vital force in the world. Prussia's type of militarism is, indeed, nothing but the outward and visible sign of an inward and spiritual disease, a disease of our congested civilization, which, like any physical infection, must be fought not only by remedial measures

but by organized efforts of preventive education. It will not suffice to defeat Germany in war. Unless and until a strong moral reaction against Junkerdom can be brought about in the soul of her people, humanity will be compelled to stand on guard against its ever-recurring treasons, stratagems, and spoils. There can be no permanent reconciliation between the German and the non-German conception of civilization, between Christian ideals and German frightfulness.

This dignified appeal submitted by the French Government to the impartial judgment of civilization and posterity, can hardly fail to achieve its purpose. Its judicially recorded evidence of the countless cold-blooded crimes perpetrated by the German army, acting under the orders of responsible authority, must evoke an immediate and powerful response all over the world, uniting the nations in a new and firm determination that The Hague Conventions of the future shall be something more than the pious expression of irresponsible aspirations, and that until Germany shall have learned to respect them in deed as well as in word she must remain morally ostracized, an outcast from civilization. From the stricken fields of Belgium and France comes a message to the nations which shall surely be heard, the bitter cry of defenceless women and children driven from their homes, of prisoners tortured and put to death, or wounded men foully

slain in cold blood by the order of German generals. Surely these

> Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against
> The deep damnation of their taking-off,
> And pity, like a naked new-born babe,
> Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubim, horsed
> Upon the sightless couriers of the air,
> Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye.

J. O. P. Bland.

PREFACE

ON July 29, 1899, Count Münster signed at The Hague, in the name of the German Empire, the "Convention concerning the laws and customs of war on land," this being the first occasion on which the civilized nations had fully recorded their mutual undertaking to do, and not to do, certain things, as definite obligations binding upon belligerents.

The signatory Powers placed full confidence in this agreement and regarded it as invested with full authority until, in 1902, the General Staff of the German army published a book which was calculated to surprise and disturb them. This work is a manual entitled *Kriegsbrauch im Landkriege* (*The Laws of War on Land*).[1] Against our written laws and the provisions elaborated in time of peace by "jurists,"[2] this work sets up the

[1] "Kriegsbrauch im Landkriege," No. 31 of the collection entitled *Kriegsgeschichtliche Einzelschriften, herausgegeben vom Grossen Generalstabe* (Kriegesgeschichtliche Abteilung 1), Berlin, E. S. Mittler und Sohn, 8vo, pp. 75. Translated into English by J. H. Morgan, M.A. *The German War-Book*, with a critical introduction, London, John Murray, 1915.

[2] NOTE BY TRANSLATOR: Maître Edouard Clunet has summarized the arguments of international jurists, and the consensus of opinion

"custom and the hereditary tradition" of the German race. It puts the German officer on his guard against the "humanitarian ideas" (*humanitäre Anschauungen*, p. 3) which inspired the Conferences of Geneva, of Brussels, and The Hague, and it lays down for him rules of conduct which very frequently, even in essential matters, are opposed to the stipulations of the Convention of 1899, and this although that Convention bears the signature of the German Empire, and was drawn up by representatives of the Powers, among whom were not only "jurists" but soldiers.

The publication of this manual produced a marked sensation, and when the Conference of The Hague came together again in 1907, the delegates of the Powers had intended to ask Germany for explanations on the subject. But the German representative, Baron Marschall von Bieberstein, forestalled them: to cut short any discussion of the matter, he put forward a proposal

---

amongst civilized men in defining as follows the origin and objects of the "common law" of nations.

"By the very fact of their co-existence in multiple, homogeneous, and independent groups, modern nations have become alive not only to their rights but to their obligations. To avoid anarchy, or sterile, endless, sanguinary strife, modern nations have followed, in time of war as well as in time of peace, certain customs and traditions. Continued conformity to these rules of conduct has resulted in the creation of a kind of *common law*, which presents the greater resistance to negative criticism because it is purely empiric. From the interpenetration of peoples by the communication of ideas, by the contact of individuals, by the dovetailing of moral and material factors, there has resulted a formidable mingling of interests, sentiments, and needs." This is the common law of civilized nations, of the *maxima respublica gentium*.

which made it possible to atone for any violation of the rules of The Hague by means of pecuniary payment. This proposition, accepted by the Conference, is set forth in Article 3 of Convention IV. of 1907, as follows:

"A belligerent party which violates the provisions of the said Regulations shall, if the case demands, be liable to pay compensation. It shall be responsible for all acts committed by persons forming part of its armed forces."

Official Germany thus publicly repudiated the theories set forth in its *Kriegsbrauch im Landkriege*. Nevertheless, so far as the French Government is aware, no amended edition of this book has ever been published, nor has it been replaced by any new manual. And whilst, on the one hand, the Government of the French Republic promoted the publication of a manual for French officers, founded in its entirety on the rules of The Hague, on the other hand, the *Kriegsbrauch im Landkriege* continued to place before the German army the doctrine advocated by its highest authorities. Seen in this light, the proposal put forward by Baron Marschall von Bieberstein was merely a blind to deceive the signatory Powers.

It will thus be seen that, even in time of peace, Germany, whilst solemnly undertaking to observe The Hague Convention, was deliberately planning to violate

it.[1] A Commission appointed by the French Government, September 23, 1914, was entrusted with the task of enquiring on the spot into the breaches of international law committed by the enemy. This Commission, consisting of Messrs. Georges Payelle, Chief President of the Cour des Comptes; Armand Mollard, Minister Plenipotentiary; Georges Maringer, Councillor of State; and Edmond Paillot, Councillor of the Cour de Cassation, has collected a considerable number of instances, and incorporated them in weighty reports which demonstrate the extent and gravity of the crimes in question. These were published in four instalments on December 17, 1914, and on March 8, May 1, and May 8, 1915, respectively. The present work goes to prove the extent and serious nature of the violations which have occurred.

In the present publication there will be found about a hundred documents, which have been taken almost at random from amongst hundreds of others no less convincing. Reports by French officers and soldiers, sworn statements by French citizens, proclamations and orders of the day by German commanding officers, and the proofs and admissions supplied by the diaries and letters of German soldiers; all these documents

[1] Germany signed and ratified this convention with the reservation of a single Article, viz. Article 44, of which, therefore, no mention will be made in the present work (*vide* the Yellow Book entitled *Documents diplomatiques, Conférence internationale de la paix*, Paris, Imprimerie Nationale, 1899–1908, p. 270).

possess in themselves a kind of authority to which, generally speaking, there is no possible reply.

They are divided into several chapters, and at the beginning of each chapter are quoted certain articles of The Hague Convention, in such manner that the conflict between the *undertakings given by Germany* and the *deeds committed by Germany* will be clearly manifested.

Under the following ten headings are set forth not all, but a certain number of the violations of the laws of war committed by Germany on land:

I.—Violation of the Neutrality of Luxemburg and Belgium.

II.—Violation of the French Frontier before Declaration of War.

III.—Killing of Prisoners and Wounded.

IV.—Looting, Arson, Rape, and Murder.

V.—Violations of the Geneva Convention.

VI.—Use of Forbidden Bullets.

VII.—Use of Burning Liquids and Asphyxiating Gas.

VIII.—Bombardment of Fortresses without Notice, and of Unfortified Towns; Destruction of Buildings Consecrated to Religion, Art, Science, and Charity.

IX.—Treacherous Methods of Warfare.

X.—Cruelties Inflicted on the Civil Population.

Except in certain exceptional cases, the facts of which

this work affords proof are not to be classed as the crimes committed by individuals, of which a certain number occur even in the noblest of armies; they are collective crimes, tolerated in some cases and in others committed under orders, crimes which, in view of their frequency and seriousness, can be explained only as representing the predetermined and systematic intentions of the highest military authorities.

Setting aside the States actually belligerent, thirty-three States at present neutral were represented at The Hague in 1907; all these were witnesses to the undertakings given by Germany, and to them Germany's word was plighted: the violation of that pact affects them, therefore, all alike.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

VIOLATION OF THE NEUTRALITY OF LUXEMBURG AND BELGIUM

PAGE

No. 1. Despatch from M. Eyschen, Minister of State at Luxemburg, to M. Réné Viviani, President of the Council and Minister of Foreign Affairs, Paris. *August* 2, 1914. 2

No. 2. Telegram addressed by M. Davignon, Belgian Minister of Foreign Affairs, to the Belgian Ministers in London and Paris. *August* 4, 1914 3

No. 3. Despatch from the Minister for Belgium at Berlin to M. Davignon, Belgian Minister for Foreign Affairs. *August* 4, 1914 4

No. 4. Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting the rupture of diplomatic relations with the German Government. *August* 8, 1914 5

CHAPTER II

VIOLATION OF THE FRENCH FRONTIER BEFORE DECLARATION OF WAR

No. 5. Orders or instructions issued to the French troops, to prevent any violation of the frontier of Germany or that of neutral countries. *August* 17, 1914 13

No. 6. Despatch from the Chief Inspector of Customs at Belfort to the Director-General of Customs at Paris. *August* 23, 1914 20

CHAPTER III

THE KILLING OF PRISONERS AND WOUNDED

No. 7. Police Report concerning the murder of nine wounded men at Benviler (Meurthe and Moselle) 27

No. 8. Police Report relating to the massacre of thirty French prisoners at "Les Tiges," Saint-Dié (Vosges). *October* 15, 1914 30

PAGE

No. 9. Official Report of a statement made by Félix Herbet, a soldier of the 1st class of the 106th Regiment, wounded in action and undergoing treatment at the auxiliary hospital, No. 201, at Marseilles, referring to the killing of four wounded men at Lavoux-Marie (Meuse) 32

No. 10. Report by Colonel Chiche, commanding the 134th Reserve Brigade, concerning the massacre of over fifty French prisoners near the trench at Calonne. *September* 23, 1914 35

No. 11. Report by Captain Eydoux, commanding the 1st Battalion of the 67th Regiment of Infantry, concerning the same crime 37

No. 12. Statement by Sub-Lieutenant Bosveuil, of the 61st Regiment of Infantry, with reference to the killing of a Frenchman wounded at Avocourt (Meuse). *February* 12, 1915 38

No. 13. Official Report of a statement made by Private Charton, *in extremis*, having reference to the massacre of fifty or sixty French prisoners in the vicinity of Mouilly (Meuse). *October* 2, 1914 40

No. 14. Report by Captain Louvard, of the Staff of the 3d Group of Reserve Divisions, to General P. Durand, commanding the 3d Group, having reference to the killing of the wounded left on the field at Chauvoncourt-Courouvre (Meuse). *September* 29, 1914 41

No. 15. Official Report of the dying statement of Private Godefroy of the 39th Regiment. *September* 19, 1915 43

No. 16. Statement of Private Lafleur, of the 21st Regiment of Colonial Infantry, who, after being disarmed, was shot in the face by a Bavarian officer 44

No. 17. Report by Sergeant Maginot of the 6th Company of the 44th Territorial Regiment to the Lieut.-Col. in command of the said Regiment, on the finding of the mutilated body of a French soldier at Ornes (Meuse). *October* 24, 1914 46

No. 18. Order of the day by General Stenger, ordering the killing of prisoners, whether wounded or not 48

No. 19. Autograph statements by two privates of the 38th Regiment of Prussian Reserve Infantry, describing how a number of French prisoners were shot by the orders of Captain Zeiche, Lieutenant Kaps, and Lieutenant Nehring 54

No. 20. Extract from the note-book of Sergeant-Major Bruchmann, of the 144th Regiment of Infantry, 16th Army Corps, recording the order to finish off wounded Turcos 61

No. 21. Extract from the note-book of the Reservist Fahlenstein, of the 34th Fusiliers, 2d Army Corps, describing a massacre of wounded French soldiers, killed by order 63

No. 22. Extract from the note-book of Heinrich Fröhlich, a Non-commissioned Officer of the 117th Regiment of Infantry, 3d Hessians, 18th Army Corps, recording the order to give no quarter 65

No. 23. Extract from the note-book of Göttsche, a Non-commissioned Officer of the 85th Regiment of Infantry, 9th Army Corps, recording the order to make no English prisoners 67

PAGE

No. 24. Extract from the diary of a private of the Reserve, Joh. Nusser, belonging to the 3d Bavarian Regiment, Reserve 69
No. 25. Fragment of a letter found on September 20, 1914, at l'Ecouvillon, in a German trench, recording the massacre of prisoners 72
No. 26. Extract from the diary of Lieut. Lindau, of the 13th (Hohenzollern) Regiment of Artillery, recording the massacre of French prisoners by the order of a Bavarian colonel 74

CHAPTER IV

LOOTING, ARSON, RAPE, MURDER

No. 27. Memorandum addressed by the French Government to the Powers on August 19, 1914 77
No. 28. Deposition of Madame Dupuis, bookkeeper at Rouves (Meurthe-et-Moselle) on the murder of her husband. *August* 24, 1914 79
No. 29. Extracts from an official Police Report of the burning of the village of Diarupt (Vosges) 81
No. 30. Extracts from an enquiry into the burning and looting of Raon-l'Étape (Vosges) 90
No. 31. Police Report concerning a murder and two outrages committed near La Ferté-Gaucher (Seine-et-Marne). *September* 23, 1914 93
No. 32. Police Report concerning the murder of a young girl of Esternay (Marne) by a German soldier. *February* 27, 1915 97
No. 33. Placard posted on the walls of Lunéville by order of the German authorities 100
No. 34. Placard posted on the walls of Reims by order of the German authorities 102
No. 35. Autograph Statement of a Westphalian prisoner concerning the murder of two women and a child shot at Metten (Belgium) by order of Major Kastendick and the Reservist Captain Dültingen, both of the 57th Regiment of Prussian Infantry 105
No. 36. Extract from the note-book of Private Albers, of the 78th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, describing looting 109
No. 37. Extract from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 11th Battalion of Light Infantry, 11th Army Corps, concerning massacres at Leffe and Dinant 111
No. 38. Extract from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 19th Division, Saxon Ersatz, concerning the murder of a Catholic priest 114
No. 39. Extract from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 50th Regiment of Infantry, 5th Army Corps, concerning the burning and sacking of Ethe (Belgium) 116

PAGE

No. 40. Extract from the note-book of an anonymous hospital orderly, concerning an act of cruelty to prisoners 118

No. 41. Extract from the note-book of a soldier of the 32d Infantry Regiment, 4th Reserve Corps, describing the first two advances of his regiment in Belgium 118

No. 42. Extracts from the note-book of another soldier of the 32d Infantry, 4th Reserve Corps, concerning murders and looting at Tongres, Creil, etc. 122

No. 43. Extract from the note-book of Baum, a soldier of the 182d Regiment of Infantry, concerning looting at Novion, Rethel, etc. 124

No. 44. Extract from the note-book of Heinrich Bissinger, a soldier in the 1st Regiment of Bavarian Pioneers, 1st Battalion, 2d Company, concerning crimes of the German troops at Orchies and Valenciennes 126

No. 45. Extract from the note-book of Horst Braener, a soldier of the 134th Regiment of Infantry, 10th Saxons, 19th Army Corps, concerning the looting and burning of several villages round Namur 128

No. 46. Extract from a letter written by Erwin Brasch, of the 1st Regiment of Light Horse, a prisoner, concerning the crimes he witnessed 130

No. 47. Extracts from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Burkhardt, of the 1st Company of the 100th Regiment Grenadiers, Reserve 133

No. 48. Extracts from the note-book of Private Buttner, of the 100th Grenadiers, 12th Army Corps 135

No. 49. Extract from the note-book of Erich Dressler, of the 3d Company of the 100th Regiment of Grenadiers (1st Saxon Corps) 137

No. 50. Extract from the note-book of Private Fritz Ehrhardt, of the 170th Regiment of Infantry, concerning the burning of Sainte-Barbe (Vosges) 139

No. 51. Extract from the note-book of Lieutenant Elster, of the 77th Regiment of Infantry, Reserve, concerning the burning of Ottignie (Belgium), in which he stigmatizes certain German corps 141

No. 52. Extract from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Fritz Gehrmann, of the 88th Regiment of Infantry, 18th Army Corps 143

No. 53. Extract from the note-book of Private Richard Gerhold, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, describing the ill-treatment of the Belgian population 148

No. 54. Extract from a note-book probably written (according to Private Paul Glöde, 76th Infantry Regiment, a prisoner at Casablanca, Morocco) by Lance-Corporal Dannehl, 9th Battalion of Engineers, 9th Army Corps, describing the acts of the German troops in Belgium 150

PAGE

No. 55. Extract from the diary of Non-commissioned Officer Erich Harlach, of the 38th Regiment of Fusiliers (Silesians), 6th Army Corps, describing and condemning the excesses committed by the Prussian troops 153

No. 56. Extract from the note-book of Private Hassemer, of the 8th Army Corps, describing a massacre of French soldiers and civilians at Sommepy (Marne) 159

No. 57. Extract from the note-book of Ensign Baron von Hodenberg, of the 100th Regiment of Grenadiers, 12th Army Corps, condemning the conduct of the German troops 161

No. 58. Extract from the note-book of Private Hohl (9th Army Corps?) describing the burning of a Belgian village and the murder of thirty-five civilians 163

No. 59. Extract from the note-book of Lieutenant von Jonquières, of the 3d Regiment of Grenadier Guards, describing the burning of the village of Fosse (Belgium) and the distribution of the money looted there to the soldiers 166

No. 60. Extract from the note-book of Adjutant G. J. Kohler, of the 13th Battalion of Light Horse (Reserve), 12th Corps, recording arson and murder in Belgium 168

No. 61. Extract from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Reinhold Koehn, of the 2d Battalion of Engineers, 3d Army Corps, recording the sack of Visé (Belgium) 170

No. 62. Extract from the note-book of Private Fritz Krain, of the 4th Battalion of Light Horse (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, concerning the murder of a young girl 172

No. 63. Extract from the note-book of Private Langerhaus, of the 77th Regiment of Infantry, 10th Army Corps, recording the murder of Belgian civilians 174

No. 64. Extract from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Levith (or Levick), of the 3d Company of the 160th Regiment of Infantry, 8th Army Corps, recording the looting and burning of Bièvre 176

No. 65. Extract from the note-book of Private Menge, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, recording the hanging of a Belgian priest and his sister 178

No. 66. Extract from the note-book of the stretcher-bearer Joseph Ott, 33d Division, 16th Army Corps, describing the looting of a village by permission of officers 180

No. 67. Extract from the note-book of Max Peich, 17th Regiment of Infantry, 14th Army Corps, recording the murder of three men and a boy at Fumay (Ardennes) 181

No. 68. Extract from the note-book of Private Philipp, of the 178th Regiment of Infantry, 12th Army Corps, describing the massacre of the civil population in a village near Dinant 183

No. 69. Extract from the note-book of the volunteer recruit, Quell, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry, 19th Army Corps, recording the plundering of the Station-master's house at Launois (Ardennes) 186

PAGE

No. 70. Extract from the note-book of Lieutenant Reisland, of the 117th Regiment of Infantry, 12th Army Corps, describing the burning of several villages in Belgium 188

No. 71. Extract from the note-book of Private Rudolf Rossberg, of the 101st Grenadier Regiment, 2d Saxons, 12th Army Corps, describing the looting at Dinant and Laval-Morency 190

No. 72. Extract from the note-book of Private Karl Scheufele, of the 3d Bavarian Regiment of Landwehr Infantry, describing the burning of Saint-Maurice (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and its inhabitants 192

No. 73. Extract from the note-book of Private Adolf Schlutter, of the 39th Regiment of Fusiliers, 7th Reserve Corps, recording murders and arson at Pepinster (Belgium) 194

No. 74. Extract from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Schulz, of the 46th Regiment of Infantry 196

No. 75. Extract from the note-book of Lance-Corporal Paul Spielmann, of the Ersatz, 1st Brigade of Infantry of the Guard, recording the massacre of the inhabitants of a village near Blamont 198

No. 76. Extract from the note-book of Private Max Thomas, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry (8th Saxons), 19th Army Corps, describing the crimes committed by the German troops at Spontin (Belgium) 201

No. 77. Extract from the diary of Fr. Treinen, a volunteer enlisted in the 237th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the murder of a young man near Roulers (Belgium) 203

No. 78. Extract from the note-book of Private Weishaupt, of the 3d Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 1st Bavarian Corps, recording the burning of Parux (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and other villages of Lorraine 205

No. 79. Extract from the note-book of Private Willmer, of the 40th Brigade, Ersatz Battalion 10th Division, Ersatz Corps, recording the plundering at Champenoux, at Brin (Meurthe-et-Moselle), and at Loupmont (Meuse) 207

No. 80. Extract from the note-book of Private Hans Wix, of the 78th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, condemning the conduct of the German troops 209

No. 81. Deposition of M. Charles-Ferdinand Barbe. Police report dated August 24, 1914 211

No. 82. Deposition of M. Georges Munier. *August* 27, 1914 218

No. 83. Deposition of Lieutenant Wilhelm Peters, of the 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 33d Reserve Division. *March* 25, 1915 219

No. 84. Extract from the note-book of Private Fischer, 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 33d Reserve Division 224

CHAPTER V

VIOLATIONS OF THE GENEVA CONVENTION

PAGE

No. 85. Report by Assistant-Surgeon Mozer, of the Reserve, 161st Regiment of Infantry, addressed to Surgeon-Major Cadiot, of the same regiment, describing the circumstances under which he was wounded by a German officer. *November* 26, 1914 227

No. 86. Report forwarded by Police Lieutenant Tuaillon, in command of the district of Pontarlier, having reference to the cruelties inflicted at Recquignies on ten French hospital orderlies 233

No. 87. Report forwarded by 2d Class Surgeon-Major Rigaux, in charge of the Medical Staff of the Composite Regiment (5th Army, 1st Army Corps), having reference to the bombardment of a regimental first-aid post, stationed at the farm of La Pêcherie. *December* 9, 1914 234

No. 88. Statement by Sub-Lieutenant Desforges, of the 151st Regiment of Infantry, describing the cruel treatment inflicted on wounded men under the Red Cross flag 237

No. 89. Despatch from the Minister of War to the Minister for Foreign Affairs. *January* 15, 1915 239

CHAPTER VI

USE OF FORBIDDEN BULLETS

No. 90. Despatch from the Minister of War to the Minister of Foreign Affairs concerning the use of explosive bullets by the German troops. *September* 20, 1914 254

No. 91. Report by Lieutenant-Colonel Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, on the cartridges submitted to him for examination on August 20. *August* 20, 1914 261

No. 92. Report by Lieutenant-Colonel Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, on a cartridge submitted to him for examination by order of the Ministry of War on September 5, 1914. *September* 7, 1914 263

No. 93. Note addressed by the General Commanding the 5th Army to the Commander-in-Chief on the subject of the dum-dum bullets used by the German Army. *September* 8, 1914 266

No. 94. Report by the Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery concerning five cartridges made for the "Parabellum" pistol 267

No. 95. Despatch from the Minister of War to the Minister for Foreign Affairs. *October* 10, 1914 270

PAGE

No. 96. Report by Lieutenant-Colonel Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, with reference to a cartridge found on a soldier of the 2d Regiment of the Prussian Infantry of the Guard. *October* 24, 1914 272

No. 97. Communication made by Dr. Tuffier to the Academy of Medicine (*vide* Report of the Proceedings of the Academy of Medicine; meeting of November 24, 1914) having reference to the nature of certain serious wounds produced by the use of "reversed" bullets 275

No. 98. Order of the day by General von Lüttwitz, concerning explosive bullets. *September* 15, 1914 278

No. 99. Extract from a note-book apparently belonging to Sergeant-Major Kohler, of the 7th Reserve Regiment 281

CHAPTER VII

USE OF BURNING LIQUIDS AND ASPHYXIATING GASES

No. 100. Memorandum by the French Government concerning the use of burning liquids by the German troops. *April* 29, 1915 288

No. 101. From the Minister of War to the Minister of Foreign Affairs. *May* 6, 1915 290

No. 102. Report of Superintendent Sieur, Head of the Medical Department of the Detachment of the Belgian Army, to the Inspector-General and Director-General of the Medical Department, concerning the cases of poisoning treated after the attack at Langhemarck, April 23, 1915. *April* 25, 1915 293

No. 103. Clinical, anatomo-pathological and histo-chemical study of cases of poisoning by the irritating gases used by the Germans at Langhemarck, by Doctors R. Dujarric de la Rivière, of the Pasteur Institute, and J. Leclercq, Licentiate of the Faculty of Medicine of Lille 297

CHAPTER VIII

BOMBARDMENT OF FORTRESSES WITHOUT NOTICE, AND OF OPEN TOWNS; DESTRUCTION OF BUILDINGS DEDICATED TO PUBLIC WORSHIP, ART, SCIENCE, OR CHARITABLE PURPOSES

No. 104. Memorandum addressed to the Powers by the French Government on August 16, 1914 302

No. 105. Memorandum by the Vicar-General Landrieux and M. R. Thinot, Chapel-master of Reims Cathedral, concerning the burning and bombardment of the cathedral, September 17–19, 1914 304

PAGE

No. 106. Note by General Rouquerol on the position of the batteries at Reims in relation to the cathedral. *November* 9, 1914 311

No. 107. List of the men, women, and children, killed or injured by the explosion of bombs thrown upon Paris and the suburbs by German aircraft from August 30 to October 12, 1914. (The List is taken from the report drawn up by M. Lescouvé, Public Prosecutor) 312

CHAPTER IX

TREACHEROUS METHODS OF WARFARE

No. 108. Statement by Private Cabioch, of the 321st Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the circumstances under which certain prisoners were placed in front of the German troops 315

No. 109. Deposition of four soldiers of the 216th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing how on September 20 French prisoners were exposed to the fire of the French troops 317

No. 110. Extracts from report by Lieutenant-Colonel Payerne, commanding the 68th Regiment of Infantry, to the General in command of the 9th Army Corps on occurrences which took place on the front of the 68th Regiment, September 25–26, 1914. *October* 5, 1914 318

No. 111. Report forwarded by Lieutenant Aucour to the Colonel commanding the 2d Regiment of Dragoons, describing the circumstances in which a detachment of German infantry used two women as a screen on October 19, 1914, in Belgium. *October* 19, 1914 322

No. 112. Report of Major Hennoegen to the Major commanding the 354th Infantry Regiment, describing the manner in which certain German soldiers used women and children as a screen on September 23, 1914 324

No. 113. Letter written by Lieutenant A. Eberlein, a Bavarian officer, and published on October 7, 1914, in the "Vorabendblatt" of the "Münchener neueste Nachrichten" 325

CHAPTER X

CRUELTIES INFLICTED ON THE CIVIL POPULATION

No. 114. Report of Lieutenant Hurel upon cruelties committed by the Germans at the attack on Pont-à-Celles 328

No. 115. Report by Col. Huguet, head of the French Military Mission attached to the British Expeditionary Force, to the General Commander-in-Chief of the French Army at Châtillon-sur-Seine concerning the murder of three civilians at Hartennes (Aisne). *September* 23, 1914 329

PAGE

No. 116. Deposition of the military hospital orderly, Martin concerning the ill-treatment of a convoy of civilian prisoners 330

No. 117. Report of the ill-treatment of certain old men of Champguyon (Marne) who were taken to Germany as prisoners. *April* 2, 1915 336

No. 118. Extract from a report by Brigadier Faucheur, commanding the Brigade at Fresnes, having reference to the proceedings of the German troops at Fresnes 338

No. 119. Evidence as to crimes committed by the Germans at Sainte-Barbe (Vosges) 339

No. 120. Report of General Espérey, commanding the 5th Army, on breaches of international law committed by the Germans at Chivy (Aisne). *November* 3, 1914 340

No. 121. Deposition of Private Guilluy describing the severities which he witnessed or endured at Liévin, and afterwards on board the *Amiral Gantheaume* 343

GERMANY'S VIOLATIONS OF THE LAWS OF WAR

1914–15

CHAPTER I

VIOLATION OF THE NEUTRALITY OF LUXEMBURG AND BELGIUM

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

THE Grand-Duchy of Luxemburg shall constitute hereafter a perpetually neutral State, within the limits laid down in the treaty of the 19th April, 1839, under the guarantee of the Courts of Austria, France, Great Britain, Prussia, and Russia. It will be required to observe this same neutrality towards all other States. The High Contracting Parties undertake to respect the principle of neutrality laid down in the present Article. This principle is and remains under the sanction of the collective guarantee of the Powers, with the exception of Belgium, herself a neutral State.

(Treaty of London, May 11, 1867, Article 2.)

Belgium shall be an independent and perpetually neutral State; she will be required to observe this same neutrality towards all other States.

The Courts of Austria, France, Great Britain, Prussia,

and Russia guarantee to His Majesty the King of the Belgians the observance of all the preceding Articles.

(Treaty of London, November 15, 1831, Articles 7 and 25.)

The territory of neutral Powers is inviolable.

It is forbidden to belligerents to send across the territory of a neutral Power either troops or convoys, whether of ammunition or food-supplies.

(Convention V. of The Hague, Articles 1 and 2.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

1. In Regard to Luxemburg

No. 1

DESPATCH from M. Eyschen, Minister of State at Luxemburg, to M. Réné Viviani, President of the Council and Minister of Foreign Affairs, Paris.

LUXEMBURG, *August* 2, 1914.

I have the honour to bring to the knowledge of Your Excellency the following facts:

Early in the morning of the 2d of August, according to the information which has just reached my Government, German troops entered the territory of Luxemburg by way of the bridges at Wasserbillig and Remich, and proceeded generally in a southerly direction towards the City of Luxemburg, the capital of the Grand-

Duchy. A certain number of armoured trains with troops and ammunition have started upon the railway from Wasserbillig to Luxemburg and their arrival is momentarily expected.

These facts point to the commission of acts which are clearly in violation of the neutrality of the Grand-Duchy, guaranteed by the Treaty of London of 1867. My Government has not failed to protest energetically to the representatives of His Majesty the German Emperor at Luxemburg; a similar protest is about to be despatched by telegram to the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs at Berlin.

(*Signed*) EYSCHEN.[1]
Minister of State and President of the Government.

2. In Regard to Belgium

No. 2

TELEGRAM addressed by M. Davignon, Belgian Minister of Foreign Affairs, to the Belgian Ministers in London and Paris.

BRUSSELS, *August* 4, 1914.

The Headquarters Staff communicate information to the effect that the national territory has been violated at GEMMENICH.

(*Signed*) DAVIGNON.[2]

[1] Extract from the French Yellow Book, Document No. 131.
[2] Extract from the Belgian Grey Book, Document No. 30.

No. 3

DESPATCH from the Minister for Belgium at Berlin to M. Davignon, Belgian Minister for Foreign Affairs.

BERLIN, *August* 4, 1914.

Herein below I have the honour to forward to you a translation of a part of the speech delivered yesterday in the Reichstag by the Chancellor of the Empire, having reference to the flagrant violation of our neutrality.

"The situation in which we find ourselves justifies us in taking all measures for our defence, and necessity knows no law.

"Our forces have occupied Luxemburg and have perhaps already advanced into Belgium. This constitutes a breach of international law. It is true that France had declared at Brussels that she was determined to respect the neutrality of Belgium so long as it should be respected by the adversary. But we were well aware that France was making ready to invade Belgium. France could afford to wait; we could not. An attack by France on our flank in the region of the lower Rhine might have had fatal consequences. For this reason we have been compelled to pay no heed to the justifiable protests of the Governments of Luxemburg and Belgium. So soon as our object has been attained, we will make atonement for the wrong which we are now committing.

"For those who are threatened as we are and who are struggling for their dearest possession, there can be no thought for anything except to hack their way through; we stand side by side with Austria."

It will be observed that M. von Bethmann-Hollweg admits unreservedly that Germany is violating International Law and that she is acting wrongfully towards us.

(*Signed*) Baron Beyens.[1]

No. 4

DESPATCH from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting the rupture of diplomatic relations with the German Government.

Sir E. Goschen *to* Sir Edward Grey

London, *August* 8, 1914.

Sir,—In accordance with the instructions contained in your telegram of the 4th instant[2] I called upon the Secretary of State that afternoon and inquired, in the name of His Majesty's Government, whether the Imperial Government would refrain from violating Belgian neutrality. Herr von Jagow at once replied that he was sorry to say that his answer must be "No," as, in consequence of the German troops having crossed the frontier that morning, Belgian neutrality had been already violated. Herr von Jagow again went into the

[1] Extract from the Belgian Grey Book, Document No. 35.
[2] See "Miscellaneous, No. 6 (1914)," No. 153.

reasons why the Imperial Government had been obliged to take this step, namely, that they had to advance into France by the quickest and easiest ways so as to be able to get well ahead with their operations and endeavour to strike some decisive blow as early as possible. It was a matter of life and death for them, as if they had gone by the more southern route they could not have hoped, in view of the paucity of roads and the strength of the fortresses, to have got through without formidable opposition entailing great loss of time. This loss of time would have meant time gained by the Russians for bringing up their troops to the German frontier. Rapidity of action was the great German asset, while that of Russia was an inexhaustible supply of troops. I pointed out to Herr von Jagow that this *fait accompli* of the violation of the Belgian frontier rendered, as he would readily understand, the situation exceedingly grave, and I asked him whether there was not still time to draw back and avoid possible consequences, which both he and I would deplore. He replied that, for the reasons he had given me, it was now impossible for them to draw back.

During the afternoon I received your further telegram of the same date,[1] and, in compliance with the instructions therein contained, I again proceeded to the Imperial Foreign Office and informed the Secretary of State that unless the Imperial Government could

[1] See "Miscellaneous, No. 6 (1914)," No. 159.

give the assurance by twelve o'clock that night that they would proceed no further with their violation of the Belgian frontier and stop their advance, I had been instructed to demand my passports and inform the Imperial Government that His Majesty's Government would have to take all steps in their power to uphold the neutrality of Belgium and the observance of a treaty to which Germany was as much a party as themselves.

Herr von Jagow replied that to his great regret he could give no other answer than that which he had given me earlier in the day, namely, that the safety of the Empire rendered it absolutely necessary that the Imperial troops should advance through Belgium. I gave His Excellency a written summary of your telegram and, pointing out that you had mentioned twelve o'clock as the time when His Majesty's Government would expect an answer, asked him whether, in view of the terrible consequences which would necessarily ensue, it were not possible even at the last moment that their answer should be reconsidered. He replied that if the time given were even twenty-four hours or more, his answer must be the same. I said that in that case I should have to demand my passports. This interview took place at about seven o'clock. In a short conversation which ensued Herr von Jagow expressed his poignant regret at the crumbling of his entire policy and that of the Chancellor, which had been to make

friends with Great Britain and then, through Great Britain, to get closer to France. I said that this sudden end to my work in Berlin was to me also a matter of deep regret and disappointment, but that he must understand that under the circumstances and in view of our engagements, His Majesty's Government could not possibly have acted otherwise than they had done.

I then said that I should like to go and see the Chancellor, as it might be, perhaps, the last time I should have an opportunity of seeing him. He begged me to do so. I found the Chancellor very agitated. His Excellency at once began a harangue, which lasted for about twenty minutes. He said that the step taken by His Majesty's Government was terrible to a degree; just for a word—"neutrality," a word which in war time had so often been disregarded—just for a scrap of paper, Great Britain was going to make war on a kindred nation who desired nothing better than to be friends with her. All his efforts in that direction had been rendered useless by this last terrible step, and the policy to which, as I knew, he had devoted himself since his accession to office had tumbled down like a house of cards. What we had done was unthinkable; it was like striking a man from behind while he was fighting for his life against two assailants. He held Great Britain responsible for all the terrible events that might happen. I protested strongly against that statement, and said that, in the same way as he and

Herr von Jagow wished me to understand that for strategical reasons it was a matter of life and death to Germany to advance through Belgium and violate the latter's neutrality, so I would wish him to understand that it was, so to speak, a matter of "life and death" for the honour of Great Britain that she should keep her solemn engagement to do her utmost to defend Belgium's neutrality if attacked. That solemn compact simply had to be kept, or what confidence could any one have in engagements given by Great Britain in the future? The Chancellor said, "But at what price will that compact have been kept? Has the British Government thought of that?" I hinted to His Excellency as plainly as I could that fear of consequences could hardly be regarded as an excuse for breaking solemn engagements, but His Excellency was so excited, so evidently overcome by the news of our action, and so little disposed to hear reason that I refrained from adding fuel to the flame by further argument. As I was leaving he said that the blow of Great Britain joining Germany's enemies was all the greater that almost up to the last moment he and his Government had been working with us and supporting our efforts to maintain peace between Austria and Russia. I said that this was part of the tragedy which saw the two nations fall apart just at the moment when the relations between them had been more friendly and cordial than they had been for years. Unfortu-

nately, notwithstanding our efforts to maintain peace between Russia and Austria, the war had spread and had brought us face to face with a situation which, if we held to our engagements, we could not possibly avoid, and which unfortunately entailed our separation from our late fellow-workers. He would readily understand that no one regretted this more than I.

After this somewhat painful interview I returned to the embassy and drew up a telegraphic report of what had passed. This telegram was handed in at the Central Telegraph Office a little before 9 P.M. It was accepted by that office, but apparently never despatched.[1]

At about 9.30 P.M. Herr von Zimmermann, the Under-Secretary of State, came to see me. After expressing his deep regret that the very friendly official and personal relations between us were about to cease, he asked me casually whether a demand for passports was equivalent to a declaration of war. I said that such an authority on international law as he was known to be must know as well or better than I what was usual in such cases. I added that there were many cases where diplomatic relations had been broken off and, nevertheless, war had not ensued; but that in this case he would have seen from my instructions, of which I had given Herr von Jagow a written summary, that His Majesty's Government expected an answer to a definite question by twelve o'clock that night, and that in default of a

[1] This telegram never reached the Foreign Office.

satisfactory answer they would be forced to take such steps as their engagements required. Herr Zimmermann said that that was, in fact, a declaration of war, as the Imperial Government could not possibly give the assurance required either that night or any other night.

(*Signed*) E. GOSCHEN.[1]

[1] Extract from the English Blue Book, Document No. 160.

CHAPTER II

VIOLATION OF THE FRENCH FRONTIER BEFORE DECLARATION OF WAR

THE UNDERTAKING GIVEN BY GERMANY

THE contracting Powers agree that hostilities between them must not commence without clear preliminary notice which must take the form either of a declaration of war upon grounds assigned, or that of an ultimatum with a conditional declaration of war.

(Convention III of The Hague, Article 1.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

The Imperial German Government declared war against France on Monday, August 3, at 6.45 P.M. The following documents establish the fact that, on the one hand, up to that day and that hour, the French forces were held back within French territory, and that, on the other hand, commencing from the morning of August 2, German troops crossed the frontier at several points and committed on French territory divers acts of murder and pillage.

No. 5

ORDERS or instructions issued to the French troops, to prevent any violation of the frontier of Germany or that of neutral countries.

Grand Headquarters of the Armies of the East.
August 17, 1914.

After the placing in their respective positions of our covering troops, a formal order was issued to the officers in command of sections not to allow any of their men, upon any pretext whatsoever, to go beyond a line, drawn generally at a distance of 10 kilometres from the frontier. This line is precisely laid down for each section in the telegram number 129–3/11 T. of the 30th July. (Archives of the 3d Bureau of the Staff; special register of measures adopted in case of political tension.)

The order not to go beyond this line was not countermanded until general secret instructions were issued to the covering troops (operation No. 1) on the 2d of August, after several violations of the frontier had been committed by the Germans. But, by the same instructions, the officers commanding sections were directed to leave to the Germans all responsibility for hostilities by confining themselves to driving back over the frontier all attacking forces without themselves entering upon the enemy's territory. In order that these instructions might be brought more rapidly to the know-

ledge of the various commanders, they were specially communicated to them, in identical terms, by telephone message No. 17 on the 2d of August at 5.30 P. M. On the 3d of August at 10.30 A.M., the Commander-in-Chief again laid stress on the absolute necessity of not crossing the frontier.

At 8.45 A.M. on the 4th of August, by telegram No. 41, the Minister of War notified the generals in command of the several frontier army corps that war was declared, but he strictly forbade any advance of troops into the territory of Belgium or Switzerland and all flights of aëroplanes over these territories.

After the formal and repeated orders issued to them to limit their operations, first to a line definitely fixed and then to the German frontier, several officers in command of sections considered it their duty, even after the declaration of war, to ask whether they were authorized to cross the frontier. On the 5th of August at 12.40 P.M., the Commander-in-Chief replied (Message No. 6) that no further reasons existed to prevent the troops of the various sections from carrying out without restrictions the duty that lay before them. On the 5th of August the Commander-in-Chief authorized the advance of troops into Belgian territory and sanctioned the flying of aëroplanes over the same. This authority was given by an order issued at 7.20 A.M. on the 5th of August, 1914. The strict prohibition as regards flying over Swiss territory has been maintained

and renewed on several occasions, more especially by a telegram of the 11th of August, of which a copy is filed at the Ministry of War (Letter of the 16th August 576, C/10).

Copies of the following documents are given below:

(1) General secret instructions for the covering troops, 2d of August, 1914.

(2) Order of the Commander-in-Chief to the officers commanding covering sections, 2d August, 1914.

(3) Telephone message addressed to the officers commanding covering sections, 3d of August, 1914.

(4) Telegrams addressed to the same officers on the 4th of August.

(5) Telephone message sent to the same officers, 5th August, 1914.

(6) General order issued to the Cavalry Corps and to the 2d Army Corps on the 5th August, 1914.

1. *GENERAL Secret Instructions for Covering Troops*

Issued at PARIS, *August* 2, 1914.

(1) From information received it appears that the Germans have this morning violated the French frontier at three points, namely, between Delle and Belfort, opposite Cirey-sur-Vezouze, and both to the north and the south of Longwy.

Under these circumstances, the order forbidding the

passage of troops eastwards beyond the line laid down by telegram No. 129–3/11 T, situated generally at a distance of 10 kilometres from the frontier, is hereby rescinded. Nevertheless, for national reasons of a moral kind and for most important reasons of diplomacy, it is absolutely necessary to leave to the Germans all responsibility for hostilities. Therefore, until further orders, covering troops will confine themselves to driving back attacking forces beyond the frontier without pursuing them and without penetrating into the territory of the enemy.

(2) The Commander-in-Chief intends to take up the general offensive only when his forces have been concentrated.

(*Signed*) J. JOFFRE.
General Commanding-in-Chief.

2. *ORDER of the Commander-in-Chief issued to the officers commanding covering sections.*

PARIS, *August* 2, 1914, 5.30 P.M.

Telephone Message. (The text of this order is similar to that given above, omitting the last paragraph.)

(1) From information received it appears that the Germans have this morning violated the French frontier at three points, namely, between Delle and Belfort, opposite Cirey-sur-Vezouze, and both to the north and the south of Longwy.

Under these circumstances, the order forbidding the passage of troops eastwards beyond the line laid down by telegram No. 129–3/11 T, situated generally at a distance of 10 kilometres from the frontier, is hereby rescinded. Nevertheless, for national reasons of a moral kind and for most important reasons of diplomacy, it is absolutely necessary to leave to the Germans all responsibility for hostilities. Therefore, until further orders, covering troops will confine themselves to driving back attacking forces beyond the frontier without pursuing them and without penetrating upon the territory of the enemy.

3. *MESSAGE telephoned to the officers in command of sections of covering troops.*

PARIS, *August* 3, 10.30 A.M.

The first paragraph of the General Instructions for covering troops, issued yesterday, the 2d of August, at 5.30 P.M., laid stress upon the urgent necessity of not crossing the frontier for reasons therein specified. If any incidents should occur, they must take place and be developed only on French territory. This order will be confirmed to you by an officer of the Grand General Staff, who will go to see you this evening by motor-car.

(*Signed*) J. JOFFRE.
The General Commander-in-Chief.

4. *TELEGRAMS sent to the 2d, 6th, 7th, 20th, and 21st Corps.*

August 4, 1914, 10.40 A.M.

War is declared.

Italy has made an official declaration of complete neutrality. Germany will endeavour, by the dissemination of false news, to induce us to violate the neutrality of Belgium and Switzerland. It is strictly forbidden, in the most formal manner, until the issue of new orders to the contrary, that any of our troops should penetrate, either as patrols or single scouts, into Swiss or Belgian territory, or that any airman should fly over the territories of these countries.

(*Signed*) MESSIMY.

5. *THE GENERAL Commander-in-Chief to the Generals in command of the 20th, 2d, 6th, 7th, and 21st Corps.*

August 5, 12.20 P.M.

War having been declared, no further restrictions are imposed upon the covering operations, which may now be executed in accordance with the plans and duties assigned to the troops of the different sections.

(*Special instructions to the 21st Corps.*)

You are therefore authorized to occupy the passes

of the Vosges, and of the Col-du-Bonhomme, and the Gap of Saales.

Copy taken:

Major-General Belin.

Telephone message, confirmed by telegram.

J. Joffre.

6. *INSTRUCTIONS issued in common to the Cavalry Corps and to the 2d Corps.*

Paris, *August* 5, 7.20 and 7.45 A.M.

(1) French aëroplanes and dirigibles are authorized to fly over Belgian territory. But as the Belgian troops were yesterday still under orders to fire upon all airships, and as the countermanding order may not as yet have reached everybody, it will be necessary for our pilots to fly at a considerable height.

(2) Cavalry patrols for reconnaissance work are also authorized to penetrate into Belgian territory, but for the present they must not be supported by any large bodies of troops. Your object from now onwards should be to act upon this authority with discretion, so as to cut the lines of communication as near to the frontier of Luxemburg as possible—that is to say, the roads leading westwards from in front of Virton-Stavelot.

(3) Express orders must be issued to the troops to

regard themselves as being in the country of a friend and ally; to make no requisitions until the convention, now under discussion, on this subject has been made known, and to buy nothing except by friendly agreement and for ready cash.

J. JOFFRE.
The General Commander-in-Chief.

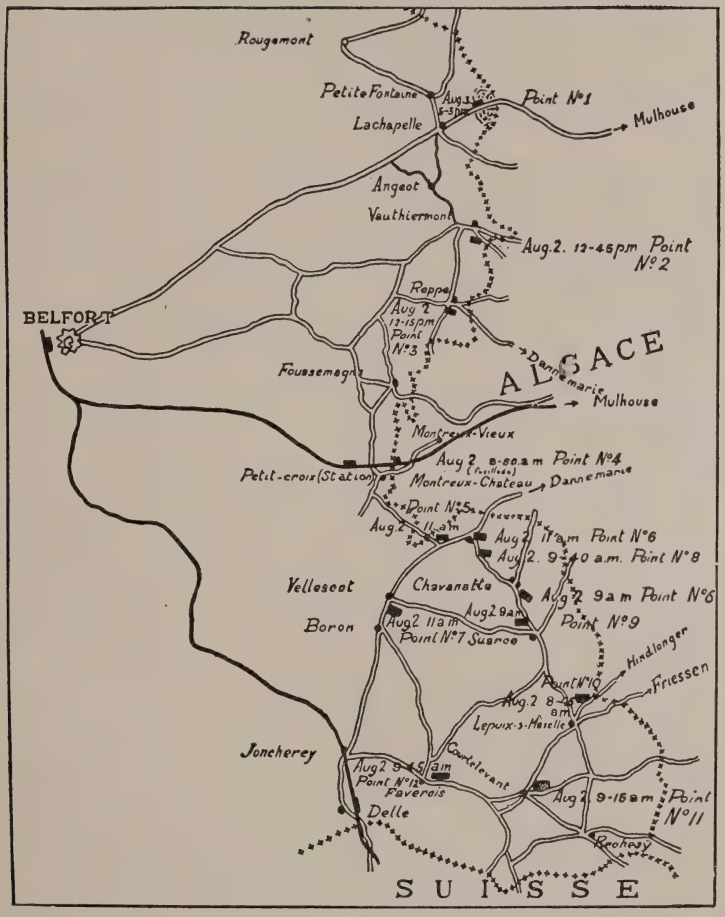
No. 6

DESPATCH from the Chief Inspector of Customs at Belfort to the Director-General of Customs at Paris.

BELFORT, *August* 23, 1914.

I have the honour to hand you herewith enclosed the reports, twelve in number, called for in your communication of the 15th inst. In order that the incidents therein referred to may be more clearly understood, I append also a rough map of the district. I need hardly add that these incidents were duly communicated to the military authorities as and when they took place.

No further incidents of the kind have been witnessed by the officers under my orders since the Declaration of War. On the 18th August, however, two officers at Delle, on sentry duty at the railway bridge, fired upon two Swiss mounted patrols who, mistaking their way in the darkness, had crossed into French territory. The official report which deals with this incident (No. 13)



Map showing certain points where the French frontier was violated by the German armies before the declaration of war.

is also included. I may supplement it by stating that on the following day a lieutenant-colonel of the Swiss army called upon the captain at Delle to express his regrets. The general in command at Belfort and the general commanding the army at Alsace were immediately informed.

(*Signed*) CAPPELLE.
Inspector-General of Customs.

ENCLOSURES

REPORT from the Station of Vauthiermont.

We, the undersigned—Charles Zerringer, Sergeant-in-Charge of the Customs Station of Vauthiermont, in the district of Belfort, together with Customs officers Goffinet, Josso, Regnauld, Poussardin, Blondeau, Clerc, Ferrier, Pidon, and Rey, detached for special duty to keep watch over the Franco-German frontier at Vauthiermont—hereby certify that on the 2d of August, 1914, at forty-five minutes past twelve (noon), we saw a patrol of seven German Dragoons, mounted, who came from the interior and were proceeding beyond the frontier at a distance 250 yards south of the village of Vauthiermont. Upon catching sight of us they put their horses to the gallop. We fired upon them, about twenty shots in all, until they disappeared in the forest which lies close to the frontier. From their movements we have reason to believe that two of these horsemen were wounded.

We have drawn up this official report of the facts.

Signed by the above-named Customs officers at the station of Vauthiermont on the 18th August, 1914.

REPORT from the Station of Reppe.

We, the undersigned—Lieut. Parachie, commanding the Station of Reppe, Sergeant Bize, and Customs officers Baur, Muller, Guillem, and Borne—hereby certify that on the 2d August, 1914, we were at a quarter-past twelve (noon) on watch at the village of Reppe (which is at the crossroads between Bréchaumont and Dannemarie), at 300 yards' distance from the Franco-German frontier, when we caught sight of a patrol of nine German cavalry, who, coming at a trot up the road from Fousse-magne, were making for the point which we occupied.

We opened fire upon them immediately at about 40 yards. But putting spurs to their horses, they dashed ahead, firing upon us as they passed without hurting any one. Those of them who first reached the barrier which had been placed across the road jumped over it, but the last two were unable to do so, and their horses struck the barrier, which was broken. One of these men came down with his horse; Sergeant Bize, who was nearest to him, took him prisoner, but the horse got up immediately and rejoined the others, who made off across the frontier at full speed. The prisoner, who belonged to the 22d Regiment of Dragoons in garrison

at Mulhouse, was wounded in the forehead. He received first aid and was handed over on the same day to the military authorities. In proof of which we have drawn up the present report.

Signed by the above-mentioned officers.

REPORT from the Station of Petit-Croix.

We, the undersigned Corporal Berlon, and Customs Officers Zerr and Romain, certify that on the 2d of August at 8.50 A.M., being on duty at about 100 yards' distance from the frontier, at the point on the railway known as "The Machine Dépôt," we were attacked by a party of about twenty-five Germans who fired some fifteen shots at us; these men were upon German territory, some of them, at 150 yards from the frontier, at the place called Le Breuleux, and the rest 400 yards away at a point of the pass overlooking Montreux-Vieux.

Without returning the enemy's fire, we fell back upon our station and called the men to arms.

We, the undersigned, Captain Dentz, in command of the station; Captain Monneret; Sergeants Lapprand and Contesse; Corporal François; and officers Grandmougin and Cuenin, hearing the alarm raised went forward at once followed by all the strength of the Station. At a point situated at 150 yards east of the pass which runs above Montreux-Château on the railway, we were again attacked by a volley of about fifteen shots. Seeing the

Germans on the edge of the wood, I, Dentz, opened fire. Nineteen shots were fired, upon which the enemy withdrew. Nobody on our side was hit.

Signed by the above-named officers at Petit-Croix, on the 19th August, 1914.

REPORT from the Station of Chavannes-les-Grands.

I, the undersigned, Lieutenant Savarin, commanding the Station of Chavannes-les-Grands, certify that on the 2d August, 1914, at about nine o'clock in the morning I was passing through Chavanatte, about 2 kilometres' distance from the frontier, when I saw coming by the road from Suarce, a patrol consisting of about ten German cavalrymen, which first spread through the orchards of this village, and then following the same road, made for Chavannes-les-Grands, where shortly afterwards it was received with shots fired by the men that I had rapidly posted on the outskirts of the place. At ten o'clock I learned that a strong German patrol had reached the farm of La Taille, three kilometres from the frontier. At about eleven o'clock I saw several German cavalrymen at the crossroads leading from Chavannes-les-Grands to Vellescot and to Montreux-Château, 2 kilometres from the frontier, making in the direction of the boundary mark which stands on the latter road.

(*Signed*) LIEUTENANT SAVARIN,

Saint-Dizier, *20th August*, 1914.

Eight other reports, similar to those above given, were enclosed in the despatch from the Inspector of Customs at Belfort. In order not to overburden this work, they are not inserted here. But they are held at the disposal of the Powers, as well as seven official reports of investigations conducted by other administrative authorities. There are in all, nineteen official reports which prove the violation of the French frontier by German patrols notably at the following points:

Station of Chavannes-les-Grands, August 2, 11 A.M.
" Boron, August 2, 11.15 A.M.
" Romagny, August 2, 9.40 A.M.
" Suarce, August 2, 9 A.M.
" Lepuix-sur-Selle, August 2, 8.45 A.M.
" Courtelevant, August 2, 9.15 A.M.
" Faverois, August 2, 9.45 A.M.
" Lanfroicourt, August 2, 5.30 P.M.
" Létricourt, August 2, 5.30 P.M.
" Ban-de-Laveline, August 2, 5 P.M.
" Bezanze-la-Grande, August 3, 9.30 A.M.
" Moncel, August 3, 11.30 A.M.
" Vaucourt, August 3, 12 noon.
" Brin-sur-Seille, August 3, 1 P.M.
" Réchicourt, August 3, 1 P.M.

CHAPTER III

THE KILLING OF PRISONERS AND WOUNDED

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

IT is forbidden:

(*c*) *To kill or wound an enemy who, having laid down his arms, or no longer having means of defence, has surrendered at discretion.*

(*d*) *To declare that no quarter will be given.*

(Article 23 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

1. French Evidence.

No. 7

POLICE REPORT concerning the murder of nine wounded men at Benviler (Meurthe and Moselle).

On this day, the 30th November, 1914, at 11.30 A.M., we, the undersigned, Alphonse Rouillon and Paul Pierson, unmounted police, stationed at Lunéville in the Department of Meurthe-et-Moselle, wearing our uniform and carrying out the orders of our superior officers, acting upon a request for information issued by the Sub-Prefect of

Lunéville, dated the 21st November, 1914, forwarded to us by our district Inspector under No. 3397 3/1, took down the following evidence:

M. Joseph Houillon, 69 years of age, cultivating the farm of La Petite Rochelle at Benviler, declares as follows:

"On the 22d August, 1914, at about two o'clock in the afternoon, nine wounded men came to my house, amongst them a quartermaster of the 81st Regiment. I made them lie down in my barn while waiting for help, but about twenty minutes later there came a company of German infantry. Its captain, seeing these French soldiers, *gave the order to four of his men to finish them off by shooting them in the ear.* This order was forthwith carried out. These poor wounded men were put to death and their bodies were left in my barn.

"On the 26th August an armed body of Germans commanded by an officer came and proceeded to bury their victims, after having taken from them their medals, and such money as they possessed. I noticed that the quartermaster, whose name I do not know, had a little canvas bag attached to the right side of the belt of his trousers or drawers, which contained one 100-franc note and three 5-franc pieces. As regards the appearance of this soldier, I remember that he was of medium height and that his hair was brown, that is all I can tell you about him.

"After the burial, a German soldier told me that the medals and the money thus taken would be restored

after the war to the families of these soldiers, whose names and regimental numbers had been duly noted.

"All these brave fellows now lie in the same grave, opposite my house.

"I should add that the Germans compelled me to burn all that was left of the clothing and effects of these nine soldiers."

Read to the witness, confirmed and signed by him.

We have established the fact that nine soldiers have been buried in the neighbourhood of an inhabited house and of a well which supplies the same.

It is to be observed that no other quartermaster of the 81st Infantry Regiment has been buried in the district of Benviler.

In testimony whereof, we have drawn up the present official report in three copies, one to be forwarded to the Sub-Prefect at Lunéville, one to the General commanding the 20th District, and the third to our superior officers, in accordance with Article 298 of the Decree of the 20th May, 1903.

Done at Lunéville on the date above stated.

(*Signed*) PIERSON.
(*Signed*) ROUILLON.

No. 3638. Seen and forwarded:
Nancy, 7th December, 1914.
(*Signed*) DORÉ,
Major commanding the Company of
Meurthe-et-Moselle.

No. 8

POLICE REPORT relating to the massacre of thirty French prisoners at "Les Tiges," Saint-Dié (Vosges).

October 15, 1914.

On this day, 15th October, 1914, at 4 P.M. we, the undersigned, Eugène Albert Cointrin and Henri Troisgros, unmounted police, stationed at Saint-Dié, in the department of the Vosges, wearing our uniform, and in pursuance of the orders of our superior officers, acting upon the request for information made by the Public Prosecutor at Saint-Dié in the department of the Vosges, on the 14th October, 1914, No. 2625/3 took down the following evidence:

Madame Wogt (Léa), born at Aubry, 22 years of age, worker in the factory known as "Les Tiges" at Saint-Dié, states:

"On Saturday, 29th August, 1914, between 10 and 11 o'clock in the morning, at the time when an engagement was taking place in the neighbourhood between the German and French troops, I had taken refuge with my father-in-law in the cellar of the house in which I reside.

"Thirty soldiers of the 99th Regiment of Infantry came to take shelter in this cellar. They were discovered there by German soldiers. Seeing the Germans, the French soldiers laid down their arms and gave themselves up as prisoners. My father-in-law, who speaks German, conveyed to the Germans what the French

soldiers were saying, but one of them replied in German, 'We do not want any prisoners.' They made the French soldiers come out of the cellar and then compelled them to go down on their knees in the garden which adjoins the house; later they led them to the front of the house, and placed them up against it, a yard's distance from the wall, facing towards the road, and there they shot them. I did not witness the last part of this scene, for I was utterly overcome; I only heard from the cellar the noise of the firing, and the last anguished cries of the French soldiers. A few moments afterwards I came out and there I saw, stretched side by side and lifeless, the thirty Frenchmen. Before being shot one of the soldiers wished to give me the address of his wife, but he was not able to do so, for he was roughly dragged away by his executioners. Before leaving the house the Germans destroyed all the French arms which they found there."

Antoine Wogt, 69 years of age, a weaver of Saint-Dié, residing at No. 7 Rue de la Grotte, makes the following declaration:

"Some time towards the end of August (I cannot remember the exact date), at the time when the Germans occupied Saint-Dié and its neighbourhood, and when they were fighting our troops, thirty French soldiers of the 99th Infantry Regiment, came to seek shelter in the cellar, whither I had gone with my daughter-in-law.

"A squad of German soldiers came and found them there. I said to the Frenchmen, 'Surrender,' and I communicated to the Germans in German their request to do so. One of the Germans replied: 'There is no quarter; they have got to die.' The Germans took out the French soldiers, and led them to the front of the house. There they placed them in one line on their knees and shot them. The Germans who carried out this execution were in considerable force, and I did not notice what was the number of their regiment. The corpses of the French soldiers remained where they were for at least eight days."

In testimony whereof we have drawn up the present document in duplicate, one copy to be forwarded to the Public Prosecutor at Saint-Dié and the other to the officer commanding the district, as required by Article 298 of the Decree of the 20th May, 1903.

Done and concluded at Saint-Dié on the 15th October, 1914.

(*Signed*) TROISGROS.
(*Signed*) COINTRIN.

No. 9

OFFICIAL REPORT of a statement made by Félix Herbet, a soldier of the 1st class of the 106th Regiment, wounded in action and undergoing treatment at the auxiliary hospital, No. 201, at Marseilles, referring to the killing of four wounded men at Lavoux-Marie (Meuse).

On this day, the 7th February, 1915, 9 A.M., we the undersigned, Noël-Maurice-Victor Gaussail, Squadron Commander of Mounted Police, detached for duty under the General Commanding the 15th District; Auguste Perrin, Chief Surgeon of the 2d Class of the Garrison Staff at Marseilles, and Léon Jacquot, Sergeant of Mounted Police, stationed at Marseilles in the Department of the Bouches-du-Rhône (the latter acting as Recorder), having taken the usual oath, wearing our uniform and acting in accordance with the orders of the General Commanding 15th District, issued under date of 5th February, 1915, report as follows:

We proceeded to the auxiliary hospital, No. 201, installed at the Grand Lycée of Marseilles, where we saw a private of the 1st Class, Félix Herbet, belonging to the 106th Regiment of Infantry, 5th Company, Class of 1913, pastry-cook by profession, now undergoing treatment at the said hospital, who, being questioned, made the following statement:

"On the 10th September last, towards five o'clock in the morning, during a night attack at Lavoux-Marie, near to Rambercourt-aux-Pots (Meuse), the Germans turned the right of the slope which we were defending and opened fire upon us; I was struck in the right side by a bullet which pierced the intestine (confirmed by an assistant surgeon attached to the Auxiliary Hospital, No. 26, at Bar-le-Duc); I fell, and begged one of my comrades to remove my knapsack, which he did at once. At that moment my company was obliged to

retreat and I remained on the spot with three comrades who had also been seriously wounded. The Germans took possession of the slope, and then left it to continue the pursuit, detaching a few of their men to hold the position. These men proceeded to search our knapsacks and especially mine; they took my box of preserves, and from the right-hand pocket of my trousers they took also a packet of tobacco and my watch and chain.

"All of a sudden, and quite unexpectedly, I received a violent blow on the head from the butt of a rifle, then a second and a third; I lost a great deal of blood but made no sound and feigned death. One of them fired at me either with a gun or with a revolver; I cannot say which it was, for I was no longer capable of seeing anything clearly. This shot only grazed my right arm, scorching it badly. I then heard them say, 'Kaput! Kaput!' and they left me there. Close by me my three comrades were in their death-agony; they had also been shot point-blank with rifles.

"I remained there for about half an hour, and then I dragged myself, as best I could, to a distance of about 100 yards from the spot where I had been wounded. At this moment I saw a wounded Frenchman leaving the slope. Hardly had he gone 100 yards when he was stopped by a German officer, who killed him by shooting him in the head with a revolver. I was utterly terrified by what I had seen and I owe the preservation of my life to the fact that for the rest of the day I remained

lying in the mud pretending to be dead. All this time the Germans were passing quite close to me, and I dared not move. I had to pass the whole night in this condition and on the following morning, the 11th September, seeing nobody about, I was able to drag myself as far as the 54th Regiment of French Infantry which was in the neighbourhood, close to Marat-La-Petite. I was saved, and happy not to be a prisoner in the hands of the Germans."

Statement read, confirmed, and signed in our presence and under oath.

(*Signed*) F. Herbet, L. Jacquot,
N. Gaussail, Dr. A. Perrin.

Hereto attached is the certificate of the medical examination made by Dr. Perrin, Chief Surgeon of the 2d Class, who examined the wounded man.

In testimony of which we have drawn up the present official report in duplicate, the first copy together with the said medical certificate, to be forwarded to the Minister of War at Paris, and the second for our archives.

Done at Marseilles on the day, month, and year above stated.

(*Signed*) L. Jacquot, N. Gaussail, Dr. Perrin.

No. 10

REPORT by Colonel Chiche, commanding the 134th Reserve Brigade, concerning the massacre of over fifty French prisoners near the trench at Calonne.

VAUX-LES-PALAMEIX, *September* 23, 1914.

On the 22d September, 1914, at about 3.45 P.M., as the result of the vigorous counter-attack led by the colonel commanding the 134th Brigade, by Major Yehl and Captain Lauth, the 288th Regiment regained possession of the trench at Calonne.

On arrival at the crossways formed by this trench and the road which leads from Vaux to Saint-Rémy, a stretcher-bearer corporal of the 288th drew the attention of the colonel to the peculiar appearance of some fifteen dead and wounded Frenchmen who were lying in the wood. Of these men one non-commissioned officer was still alive. He gave a very moving account of their terrible experiences. Surrounded in the wood, and most of them wounded, they had been taken prisoners by the Germans, then advancing. When the Germans were compelled to retire, they made these prisoners lie down and shot them on the ground, without formalities of any kind and with savage brutality. In certain cases the heads of the victims were literally reduced to pulp.

Burning with indignation at the perpetration of such atrocities, the colonel was proceeding towards the road when he was informed that acts of the same kind had been committed in that part of the wood which lies to the north of the trench at Calonne. There a regular shambles was found, some forty French soldiers of the

54th, 67th, and 259th Regiments lying on the ground with their heads shattered.

Three soldiers who have survived these atrocities are now in the hospital of the 288th Regiment at Vaux-les-Palameix, namely Privates Tantot[1] and Grandjean of the 1st Company of the 54th, and Private Chevalier,[1] of the 20th Company of the 261st. These men will be able to supply all further details required for the information of the higher authorities.

(*Signed*) CHICHE,
Colonel commanding the 134th Brigade.
(*Signed*) DE BOIXO,
Staff Officer. By Order.

Forwarded, Ranzières, 24th September, 1914.

(*Signed*) MARABAIL,
General commanding the 67th Reserve Division.

No. 11

REPORT by Captain Eydoux, commanding the 1st Battalion of the 67th Regiment of Infantry, concerning the same crime.

On the 22d September the 1st Battalion of the 67th occupied a supporting position at the crossways formed by the road from Mouilly to Saint-Rémy and the main trench of Calonne. At about 2 P.M. the 3d Company

[1] The statements of Privates Tantot and Chevalier have been taken. They confirm the fact that the prisoners were shot point-blank.

was sent forward to support the 1st Battalion of the 54th, at the eastern edge of the wood of Saint-Rémy. About half an hour later, the 54th having withdrawn, without this being known to the lieutenant in command of the 3d Company, a section of that company was cut off by a German company and some thirty men were taken prisoners.

Compelled to beat a retreat, the Germans took their prisoners with them, but shortly afterwards they made them lie down, and having withdrawn to a distance of a few yards, fired upon them, killing and wounding a great number.

These facts are certified by Privates Louvain, Cotté, and Debèze, who succeeded in making good their escape.

(*Signed*) EYDOUX.

Seen and forwarded:

(*Signed*) M. BARD,
Colonel commanding the 67th.

No. 12

STATEMENT by Sub-Lieutenant Bosveuil of the 61st Regiment of Infantry, with reference to the killing of a Frenchman, wounded at Avocourt (Meuse).

LYONS, AUXILIARY HOSPITAL, No. 51.
February 12, 1915.

I, the undersigned, Louis Bosveuil, Sub-Lieutenant of the Reserve in the 61st Regiment of Infantry, declare

on my honour that I am prepared to testify to the truth of the following occurrence:

On the 23d September, 1914, after the attack by the Germans on the village of Avocourt (Meuse), which attack was repulsed by a bayonet charge of certain troops of the 141st and 61st Regiments, I passed a line of killed and wounded—Frenchmen and Germans. As I passed, I heard myself called by a wounded Frenchman of the 141st, who was lying on the ground, and who thus addressed me:

"Lieutenant, will you please undo my knapsack and lay my head comfortably? Those bandits have finished me, I am going to die. A bullet had struck me in the knee, and I was dragging myself along the ground, unarmed, when the Germans came upon me and riddled me with their bayonets. I have at least three wounds in the stomach and as many more in the chest; an officer discharged his revolver at my head. I have a wife and child. Tell me at least that we are winning."

My reply in the affirmative brought comfort to this brave soldier in his hour of death, which seemed to me close at hand, but which I did not witness. Night was falling, and I had to gather my section together, and bring in some prisoners.

(*Signed*) BOSVEUIL.

No. 13

OFFICIAL REPORT of a statement made by Private Charton, in extremis, *having reference to the massacre of fifty or sixty French prisoners in the vicinity of Mouilly (Meuse).*

VERDUN, *October* 2, 1914.

Albert Charton, a native of Paris, private in the 254th Regiment of Infantry, admitted to the temporary hospital No. 8 at Verdun on the 24th September, has made the following statement in the presence of Corporal Collin of the Medical Staff, of Hospital Attendant Batancourt, and of Instructor Rousseaux:

"On the 22d or 23d September, some fifty or sixty soldiers of the 254th Infantry were made prisoners by the Germans in the neighbourhood of Mouilly (Meuse). Amongst these men was an adjutant.

"After having disarmed them, a German captain drew his revolver and blew out the brains of the adjutant. This was the signal for a general massacre. The soldiers, under this captain's orders, proceeded immediately to shoot the Frenchmen point-blank. Not a single one was spared."

Charton, like all his comrades, was dreadfully wounded; an explosive bullet carried away the flesh of his left arm, the second bullet produced a complicated fracture of the left thigh, and a third made a large open

wound in the soft part of the left calf. (Extract from the records of temporary hospital No. 8, dated the 24th September, 1914.)

Thus grievously wounded, Charton fell and lost consciousness, to which fact he owed his safety for the time being. Left for dead, he was not finished off by the Germans. He was picked up on the following day, or perhaps a day later, entered the temporary hospital No. 8, on the 24th September, and died there on the 28th.

Recorded at Verdun on the 2d October, 1914, and declared to be true and trustworthy by the above-mentioned witnesses.

(*Signed*) BATANCOURT. COLLIN. ROUSSEAUX.

No. 14

REPORT by Captain Louvard, of the Staff of the 3d Group of Reserve Divisions, to General P. Durand, commanding the 3d Group, having reference to the killing of the wounded left on the field at Chauvoncourt-Courouvre (Meuse).

COUROUVRE, *September* 29, 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that on the 26th instant, being then with a portion of the staff at Rupt, before Saint-Mihiel, I was asked by the doctor of a field hospital of the 75th Division to take down the statements of several wounded soldiers, who had seen

the Germans finishing off the French wounded left upon the field after the attack on Chauvoncourt.

At the field hospital I saw the following wounded men:

(1) Private Paul Chauvet, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1904, Avignon, No. 1086). Having been left wounded upon the field before Chauvoncourt, after the withdrawal of the French troops, he saw three German soldiers going from one wounded man to another and finishing them off by firing at them point-blank.

(2) Private Louis Teissier, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1905, Avignon, No. 679), wounded in the same attack, witnessed the same spectacle.

(3) Private Albert Grousson, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1894, Antibes, No. 131), wounded in the attack upon the barracks at Chauvoncourt, was left upon the field and served as a target for several German soldiers, who only ceased firing at him when he fell prone upon the ground and pretended to be dead. At that time there had not been any French troops in the vicinity for over an hour.

These clear and formal statements were received by me in the presence of the following witnesses:

(1) Dr. Durand, surgeon-major of the 1st class, in charge of field hospital No. 1 of the 75th Reserve Division;

(2) Dr. Moirand, assistant surgeon of the same field hospital;

(3) Captain Gransard, of the Staff of the 3d Army.

(*Signed*) LOUVARD.

Seen and forwarded:
Headquarters at Verdun, 1st October, 1914.

(*Signed*) SARRAIL,
General commanding the 3d Army.

No. 15

OFFICIAL REPORT of the dying statement of Private Godefroy of the 39th Regiment.

September 19, 1915.

On the 19th September, there was brought to our hospital, from the railway station at Rosny, a wounded man named Eugène Godefroy, of the 39th Infantry Regiment, a native of Rouen (Lower Seine), class of 1904, resident at Dieppe.

Examined on the spot, he was found to be suffering from an injury to the medulla, the result of a wound from a shell, with paralysis of the lower limbs. Œdema had set in in both his legs, which were covered with many large bruises and welts. His feet, in particular, were quite shapeless; the toes had been completely crushed, bursting the skin, and the whole presented the

appearance of sanguinary pulp, coagulated into a purplish black mass. His condition was declared to be desperate; he died at one o'clock in the afternoon of the 20th.

He had strength enough to talk, and he informed doctors Calonne and Maclaud, as well as the nurse who was attending him, that he had had his feet smashed with blows from the butt-ends of rifles by German soldiers, while lying wounded on the field of battle, and unable to escape.

The present statement has been drawn up to be forwarded to the military authorities, by Dr. Calonne and by Madame Fournier, Hospital Nurse. Dr. Maclaud, being absent, is unable to sign.

(*Signed*) Dr. Calonne.

(*Signed*) Fournier-Daubignard.

(*Signed*) Dr. R. Paillot,
Chief Surgeon of the Hospital of Nogent-sur-Marne.

No. 16

STATEMENT of Private Lafleur of the 21st Regiment of Colonial Infantry, who after being disarmed, was shot in the face by a Bavarian officer.

On the 3d April, 1915, I, the undersigned, Larcher, Assistant in the Commissariat, acting reporter to the First Council of War of Paris, acting under instructions issued by the Military Governor of Paris on the 16th March, 1915,

assisted by M. Massenet, Staff Secretary, acting as Recorder, proceeded to the hospital at the Lycée Michelet at Vanves. We summoned before us the witness, Gustave Lafleur, 33 years of age, an assistant station-master of the Metropolitan Railway, a private in the 21st Colonial Regiment, residing at No. 214 Faubourg Saint-Antoine, Paris; who, having been duly sworn, made statement as follows:

"On the 26th September, at Ville-sur-Tourbe, in the Argonne, I was with my comrades firing on the Germans at a distance of 60 yards; but the enemy had the advantage in numbers and were advancing rapidly. Several of my comrades had fallen mortally wounded by my side. I tried to escape, but the Germans were all around me, and I was taken prisoner. I was led before a Lieutenant of the 69th Bavarian Regiment, who had me disarmed and ordered me to stand to attention. He searched me, and took from me my purse, containing 62 francs, together with all the private papers on my person. Then, seizing his revolver, while I was still standing to attention, he fired straight at my face. The bullet penetrated the left side of my nose, passed through the arch of the palate, and came out under my right ear, breaking the bones of my right jaw. I have no palate left, and have lost all sense of smell and taste. I was left for dead on the spot by the Germans. Having seen them depart, my only idea was to get back to the French lines. I got up therefore and began to move painfully in that direction. No sooner

had I done so than a shower of explosive bullets fell all about me, but I was not hit. Although greatly weakened by loss of blood and pain, I ran with all my strength, and plunged into the river of La Tourbe. I was able by swimming to reach the house of the Colonel, which lies close to the level-crossing of the railway. I informed my Colonel of all the facts. He did all he could for me, and he was so indignant that a German officer should have committed such a crime, that he had my statement taken down on oath forthwith by the justice of the peace at Pougues-les-Eaux. My statement must have been forwarded to the Minister of War."

The above read to the witness, confirmed, and signed in our presence.

(*Signed*) G. Lafleur.
(*Signed*) Massenet.
(*Signed*) Larcher.

No. 17

REPORT by Sergeant Maginot of the 6th Company of the 44th Territorial Regiment to the Lieut.-Col. in command of the said Regiment, on the finding of the mutilated body of a French soldier at Ornes (Meuse).

Bezonvaux, *October* 24, 1914.

On the 21st October, 1914, I left Bezonvaux village to carry out patrol duty in the direction of Ornes.

I had heard that a section of the 164th had fallen into an ambush, and had lost several men one of whom, a sergeant, was said to be wounded. I came to Ornes half an hour after noon, and there amongst the orchards at the entrance to the village I found the body of a soldier of the 164th, named Ancel, who had disappeared that morning. By means of his regimental certificate, his badge, and certain papers found upon him we were able to establish his identity.

There were no bullet wounds on the body, but the skull was literally in a jelly and the brains strewn out on the ground. There was nothing left of the face, and one ear had been cut off. They had literally kicked the wretched man's head to pieces. By the side of his body we found his rifle, smashed in two in the way customary to the Germans, but there was no sign of blood on the butt of the weapon. There is no doubt whatever that Private Ancel was made to suffer most terrible cruelties. One must have seen the body to have any idea of the barbarities which the Germans can inflict on those of our men who fall into their hands.

At the time of the discovery of the body of Private Ancel, the following men were present: Sergeant Maginot, Patrol Leader; Privates Poilblanc, Georges, Cochois, Bienaimé, Lecrique, all of the 7th Company; Toussaint, Mahaut, Mancolin, Delabarre, Fondeur, and Robert, all of the 8th Company; who have signed this

report, and state on their word of honour as soldiers that the facts above described are absolutely true.

(*Signed*)	Sergeant Maginot.	Toussaint.
	Poilblanc.	Mahaut.
	Georges.	Mancolin.
	Cochois.	Delabarre.
	Bienaimé.	Fondeur.
	Lecrique.	Robert.

The Lieut.-Col. commanding the 44th Regiment of Territorial Infantry, certifies the above signatures.

(*Signed*) Demange.

Fleury, *October* 25, 1914.

II. German Evidence

No. 18

ORDER of the day by General Stenger, ordering the killing of prisoners, whether wounded or not.[1]

[1] *Note by Translator:* The killing of prisoners, as a matter of predetermined policy and procedure, has by no means been confined to General Stenger's brigade. There is evidence from other German sources to show that neither the German army nor the German people sees anything disgraceful in these atrocities. On the contrary, they are regarded as a proof of German prowess. Witness the following report of an engagement, written by Corporal Klemt of the 154th Regiment and confirmed by Lieut. von Niem, commanding his company, which was published in the *Jauer'sche Tageblatt* on the 18th October, 1914, and subsequently reproduced in the German work entitled "J'Accuse"—

"A Day of Honour for our Regiment, September 24, 1914":

"We discovered the first Frenchmen. We brought them down from the

From and after the month of September, 1914, the French Government received through several channels information to the effect that General Stenger, commanding the 58th Brigade (112th and 142d Regiments of German Infantry), had given orders to his troops to kill their prisoners. His order had been communicated verbally, by a number of officers belonging to various units of the brigade, and repeated in the ranks from man to man. For this reason, it has reached us in several

---

trees like squirrels; on the ground they got a warm reception with butt-ends and bayonets, and had no further need of a doctor. We are now fighting not with honourable foes but with treacherous brigands. With a leap we were over the glade. There they were in the hedges. On to them! *No quarter was given.* We shoot as we stand, a very few kneeling. No one thinks now of cover. We came to a hollow. Dead and wounded Frenchmen lay in masses around. The wounded were done to death with stabs or blows, for we know that the scoundrels fire at us in the back when we have gone by. There lay one full length with his face on the ground, feigning to be dead. The kick of a sturdy musketeer soon taught him that we were there. Turning round, he asked for quarter, but, with the words, "Do you see, you —., that is how the things pierce?" he was pinned to the earth. From close by came the strange cracking sound of butt-end blows, which a man of the 154th crashed down on a French baldhead. He wisely used a French musket for the task in order not to destroy his own. Men with specially soft feelings give the *coup de grâce* to the wounded Frenchmen with a bullet; the others hack and stab for all they are worth. Bravely have our opponents fought; *they were picked men* whom we had before us. They let us approach to within 30–10 mètres; then, to be sure, it was too late. They lie at the entrance to the screen of branches with wounds slight or severe, whining for quarter. Our brave musketeers save the Fatherland the heavy cost of feeding so many enemies.

After the "bloody work" the Germans lay down to sleep. The god of dreams paints for one and another a sweet picture. With a prayer of thankfulness on our lips we prepared by slumber for the coming day.

forms, all of which, however, agree as to their general sense. Two of the forms are as follows:

(*a*) "Von heute ab werden keine Gefangene mehr gemacht. Sämmtliche Gefangene, verwundet oder unverwundet, sind niederzumachen."

"From and after today no more prisoners are to be taken. All prisoners, whether wounded or not, are to be killed.'

(*b*) "Von heute ad werden keine Gefangene mehr gemacht. Sämmtliche Gefangene werden niedergemacht. Verwundete, ob mit Waffen oder wehrlos, niedergemacht. Gefangene auch in grösseren geschlossenen Formationen werden niedergemacht. Es bleibe kein Feind lebend hinter uns."

"From and after today no more prisoners are to be taken. All prisoners are to be massacred. The wounded, whether with or without arms, are to be killed off. Even when prisoners are in regularly constituted units they are to be killed. No living enemy must be left behind us."

In order to verify this information, the French Government ordered an inquiry to be instituted in the various prisoners' camps. A certain number of soldiers belonging to the two regiments of the Stenger brigade were questioned, in accordance with the regular procedure of judicial inquiry, at the dépôts of Montbrison (Loire), Saint-Genest-Lerpt (Loire), Bonthéon (Loire), and La Roche-Arnaud (Haute-Loire), by M. Jules Picard, Commissary of Police; at the dépôt of Romans

(Drôme) by M. Jean Ernest, local Justice of the Peace; at the dépôt of Saint-Rambert (Loire) by M. Jean-Dominique Poggi, local Justice of the Peace. The evidence, taken in each case upon oath, is all to the same effect. It shows that the order of General Stenger was conveyed to the troops at Thiaville (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and in the neighbourhood on the afternoon of the 26th August, and that on the same day, at several places, French prisoners were killed and French wounded put to death.

For reasons of expediency it is not advisable that these statements should be published at the present time. In order to establish the facts beyond all possibility of doubt, it will suffice for the present to reproduce here a page from the route diary of a private soldier in the Stenger brigade, one Anton Rothacher, a native of Würtemberg (from Kappell-bei-Buchau), of the 7th Company of the 142d Regiment of Infantry. As will be seen, this soldier explains the order of General Stenger by observing that the French were the first to set the example of ill-treating the wounded. This statement is a pure invention. Here is the document. Anton Rothacher, after leaving the camp of instruction at Heuberg on the 29th July, recorded in his diary, day by day, all the stages on the line of march, and noted also briefly, but with careful precision, all the acts and movements of his regiment. Thus, on the 26th August, he records the fact that his company had

been reduced in strength from 250 to 70 men. He then adds:

DONERSTAG, 27 *Ag.*, 1914.

"Das Rgm. wird eingetheilt. Aus dem ersten u. zweiten Batalion wird eins vormirt; ich werde der 8. Kpn. zugetheilt. Es kommen heute noch verschiedene Leute zurück, welche sich in der Nacht im Walde verirrt haben. Unser Mayor Mosebach ist verwundet, weist aber kein Mensch wo er hingekommen ist. Die gefangenen u. verwundeten Franzosen werden alle erschossen, weil sie unsere Verwundete verstümpeln u. misshande[l]n. Brigadebefehl."

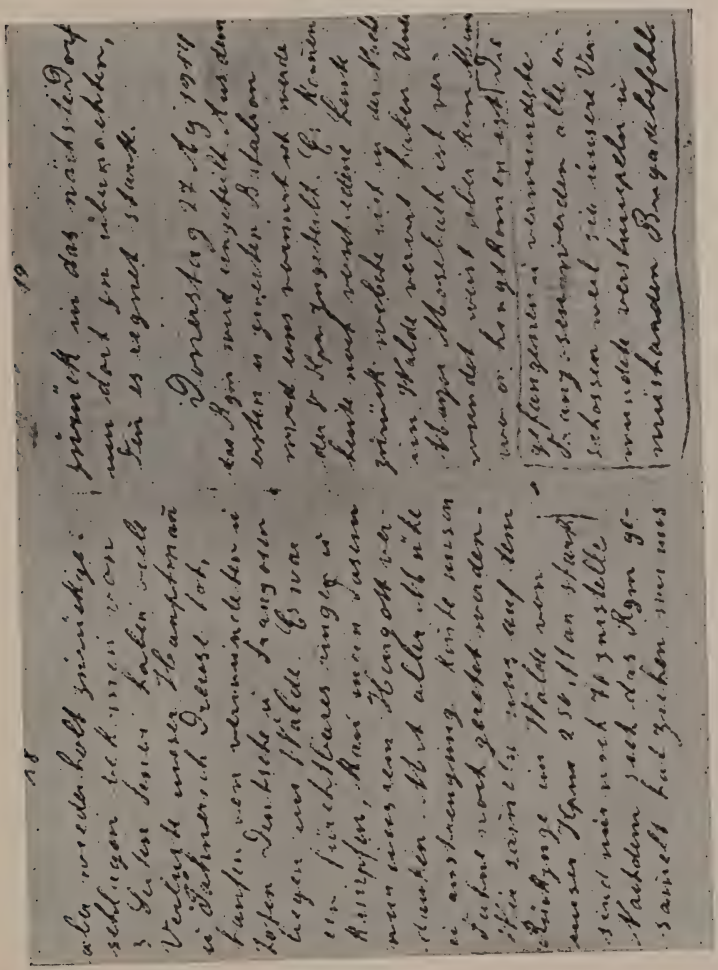
THURSDAY, *August* 27, 1914.

"The regiment is reconstructed. A single battalion has been made out of the 1st and 2d Battalions. I am appointed to the 8th Company. To-day again a number of men have rejoined who during the night had lost their way in the forest. Our Major, Mosebach, is wounded, but no one knows what has become of him. French prisoners and wounded are all shot, because they mutilate and ill-treat our wounded. Brigade Order."

Further, another soldier of the same brigade, the Reservist Reinhard Brenneisen, of the 4th Company of the 112th Regiment, at present a prisoner in England, wrote in his note-book:

"Auch kam Brigadebefehl sämtliche Franzosen ob verwundet oder nicht die uns in die Hände fielen sollten erschossen werden, es durfte keinen Gefangenen gemacht werden."

"The Brigade Order is to shoot all Frenchmen who fall into our hands, wounded or not. No prisoners to be made."



Extract from the note-book of Anton Rothacher, see p. 52.

No. 19

AUTOGRAPH statements by two privates of the 38th Regiment of Prussian Reserve Infantry, describing how a number of French prisoners were shot by the orders of Captain Zeiche, Lieutenant Kaps, and Lieutenant Nehring.

The following statements, emanating from two Prussian prisoners, both belonging to the same regiment, were first made verbally at Verdun, in the course of an inquiry conducted by Captain Rusterholtz, of the 2d Bureau of the Army Staff, in the presence of Interpreter Officer, Roger Dumas. Subsequently the two prisoners wrote out these statements, and signed them, but under the condition that their names would not be divulged. In reproducing these two documents, with all their peculiarities of writing and spelling, care has therefore been taken to eliminate from them, not only the names of the signatories, but also everything which might serve to identify them, by indicating their military and civil status.

1. Deposition of Private A.

Ich unterzeichneter,

A . . ., geboren den . . ., zu . . ., Kreis . . ., und gehöre zu der . . . ten Kompanie . . . ten Battaillons Reserve Regiment 38, schwöre vor Gott das folgende Zeilen reine Warheit sind.

Bei Wüllrich gingen die Kameraden ins Dorf und wollten sich Holz und Essen hullen und die Zievielleute hatten gesagt sie sollen sie in Ruh lassen und wir wollen ihn geben so viel wir haben. Aber die Kameraden sagten: "Ach was wollt ihr uns geben? Wir holen uns selber was wir brauchen," und als dis Kameraden wieder auf den Biewackplatz kamen, sagten sie das sie Männer und Frauen erschossen haben ungefähr 11 Männer.

Am 23 August wurden 2 Zieviellisten erschossen, weil sie bei den Soldaten auf dem Schlachtfelde die Taschen rewedriten (*sic*), und als der Hauptmann das sah, liess er sie fangen und ihnen die Augen verbinden und wurden zusammen gebunden und eine Grupe von Hauptmann komandrit (*sic*) und liess sie Niederschiessen.

Am 23 August gab der Hauptmann Zeiche den Befehl das die Franzosen sollen erschossen werden.

Am 9 September wurden 6 Französische Soldaten gefangene früh Morgens und Nachmittags 8 Mann, das sind im ganzen 14 Mann und wurden auch erschossen und es war ein Artz dabei der sie unterrichtet hat und wie sie alle erschossen waren wurden sie Beärgidt (*sic*) auf den Befehl des Kompanieführers und ich der A . . . war auch dabei wie die Leute erschossen wurden.

Am 18 September wurden auch wieder 28 bis 30 Mann gefangen nommen und wurden von driten Zuge mit Aufgeflanzten Seitengewehr die ganze Nacht bewacht und wir Kameraden gaben den Gefangenen

Zwieback und sie gaben uns Ciegareten dafür und Morgens früh wurden sie von einem Unteroffizier nach der Bahn geführt; wo sie hinkamen weiss ich nicht, aber am selben Tag wurden wieder 20 Franzosen dann 18 Gefangen. Der Leutnant Nering gab uns den Befehl weil er mit den Leuten nichts anzufangen wusste das wir diese 18 letzen erschiessen sollten, was geschah, und ich A . . . war auch dabei und mein erster Schuss draf und der 2te ging daneben, weil ein Kamerad mich gestossen hat.

Alles Obriege ist von mier freiwillig geschrieben worden, den . . .

(*Signed*) *A* . . .

Translation

I, the undersigned A . . . born the . . . at . . . and belonging to the . . . Company, . . . Battalion of the 38th Reserve Regiment, swear before God that the following lines contain nothing but the strict truth.

At Wullrich (*sic*)[1] our men went into the village; they wanted wood and provisions, and the civilians had told them that if the troops would leave them alone, they would supply all that was needed. But our men said: "Ah, what would you give us? What we need we shall take for ourselves"; and when they came back

[1] This may refer to the Belgian village of Volkrich, twelve kilometres south-west of Aix-la-Chapelle.

to bivouac, they declared that they had shot a number of men and women, about eleven men.

On the 23d August two civilians were shot because they were rifling the pockets of soldiers on the field of battle. When the Captain saw this, he had them arrested and their eyes bandaged; they were tied together and a squad was told off by the Captain to shoot them.

On the 23d August, Captain Zeiche gave the order to shoot Frenchmen.

On the 9th September, six French soldiers were taken prisoners and eight more in the afternoon; that made fourteen men in all, and they also were shot, and there was there a doctor who examined them, and when they had all been killed they were buried by the order of the officer commanding the company, and I, A . . . was there, too, when these men were shot.

On the 18th September, some twenty-eight to thirty prisoners were taken, and they were guarded all night by the third section with fixed bayonets; my comrades and I gave the prisoners some biscuits, and they gave us some cigarettes, and they were led away by a non-commissioned officer towards the railway; I do not know whither they were led, but on the same day twenty more Frenchmen were taken, and then again eighteen. Lieutenant Nehring gave us the order, as he did not know what to do with these prisoners, to shoot the last eighteen. This was done, and I, A——,

was there, and my first shot hit its man; the second missed its mark, because one of my comrades jostled me.

All the above has been written by me of my own free will, the . . .

(*Signed*) *A* . . .

2. Deposition of Private B.

Ich unterzeichneter B . . . Landwehrmann der . . . Komp. 38 Rgts der Res., schwöre vor Gott dem Allmachtigen, dass folgende Zeilen nur auf Wahrheit beruhen:

Im August, den genauen Datum kann ich nicht angeben, wurde in unserer Kompagnie, der Befehl bekannt gegeben, alle französische Gefangenen ohn Nachsicht zu erschiessen. Als wir nun nach paar Tagen 6 französische Gefangene zum Transport zugeteilt bekamen, gab Leutnant Kaps zwei Gruppen den Befehl, diese Gefangenen mit verbundenen Augen an Bäume zu stellen und zu erschiessen. Dies wurde darauf auch getan. Den Befehl zur Salve gab Leutnant Kaps selbst. Es wurde eine Salve abgegeben, bei der die französischen Gefangene sofort zusammenstürzten und nach Aussage des anwesenden Arztes auch tot waren. Die Entfernung, aus der geschossen wurde, betrug ungefähr 30 m.

Das zweite mal, habe ich von einer ähnlichen Erschies-

sung von 14 französischen Gefangenen durch die . . . Komp. von anderen Kameraden gehört.

Das dritte mal hörte ich von einem Kameraden in der letzten Zeit, dass er einmal Anfang August einen schwerverwundeten französischen Soldaten, der nach Wasser verlangte, habe auf Befehl seines Offiziers erschiessen müssen.

Endlich habe ich auch mal von einem meiner Kameraden gehört, dass er einmal ohne Befehl einen französischen Verwundeten erschossen habe.

Vorstehendes habe ich freiwillig und nach reiflicher Überlegung und mit bestem Gewissen niedergeschrieben. Es beruht auf Wahrheit. Dies bescheinige ich durch folgende Unterschrift.

(*Signed*) B . . .

Geschrieben den . . . zu Verdun.

Translation

I, the undersigned, B, belonging to the —— Company of the 38th Regiment of the Reserve, swear before Almighty God that the following lines contain nothing but the truth. In the month of August (I do not remember the exact date) our company received orders to shoot all French prisoners without mercy. A few days afterwards, when six French prisoners had been brought in, Lieut. Kaps, our company commander, gave the order to two squads to place the prisoners,

with their eyes bandaged, against trees and to shoot them, which order was immediately carried out. Lieut. Kaps himself gave the order to shoot; only one volley was fired, upon which the French prisoners immediately fell in a heap. A doctor who was present declared that they were dead. They were shot at a distance of about thirty yards. On a second occasion I heard my comrades speak of a similar execution of fourteen French prisoners by the . . . . Company. On the last occasion, quite recently, I was told by a comrade that at the beginning of August he was ordered by an officer to shoot a badly wounded French soldier who was asking for water. Another of my comrades told me that he had shot a wounded Frenchman without orders. I have written these lines of my own free will, in all sincerity and after mature reflection; they contain nothing but the truth. I confirm them by my signature.

(*Signed*) B.

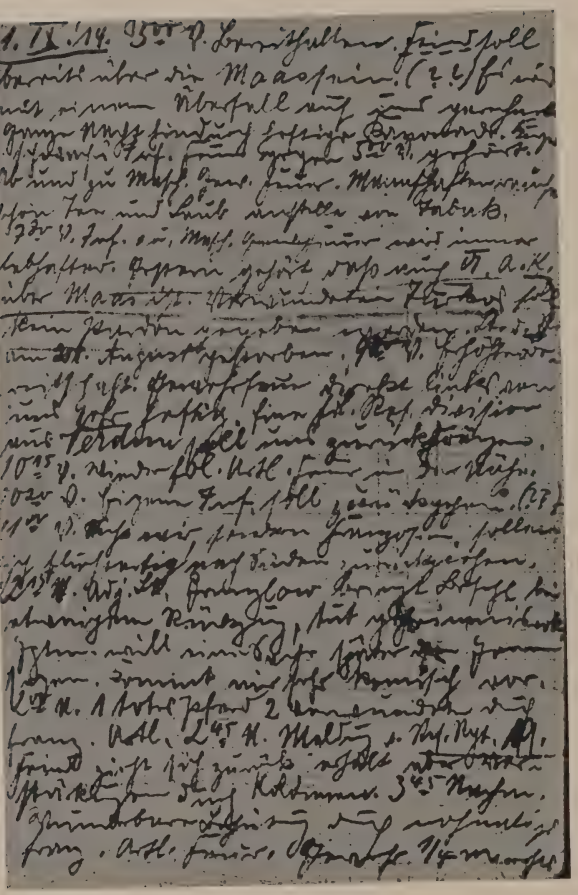
Done at Verdun, the 30th December, 1914.

No. 20

EXTRACT from the note-book of Sergeant-Major Bruchmann, of the 144th Regiment of Infantry, 16th Army Corps, recording the order to finish off wounded Turcos.

"Verwundeten Turkos soll kein Pardon gegeben werden."

"No quarter to be given to wounded Turcos."



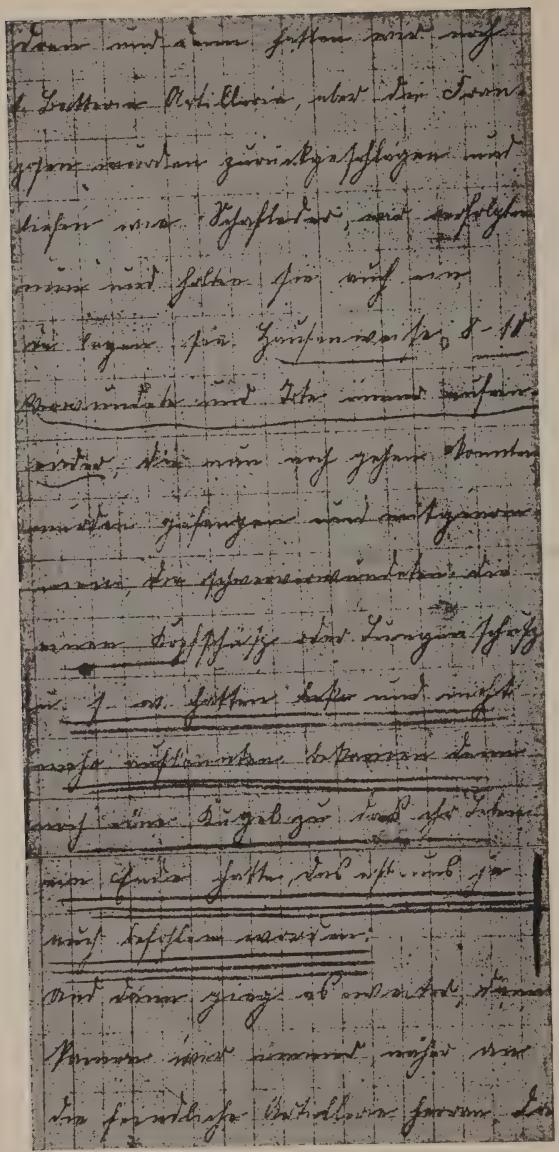
No. 20

No. 21

EXTRACT from the note-book of the Reservist Fahlenstein, of the 34th Fusiliers, 2d Army Corps, describing a massacre of wounded French soldiers, killed by order.

"Da lagen sie (die Franzosen) haufenweise 8 bis 10 Verwundete und Tote immer aufeinander. Die nun noch gehen konnten wurden gefangen und mitgenommen. Die schwer verwundeten, die einen Kopfschuss oder Lungenschuss u. s. w. hatten, und nicht mehr auf konnten, bekamen denn noch eine Kugel zu, dass ihr Leben ein Ende hatte. Das ist uns ja auch befohlen worden."

"They (the French) lay in heaps of eight or ten, wounded or dead, one on top of the other. Those who could still walk were made prisoners and carried off with us. Those who were severely wounded, shot through the head or lungs, etc., and could not get up, received another bullet which put an end to them. These were the orders given to us."



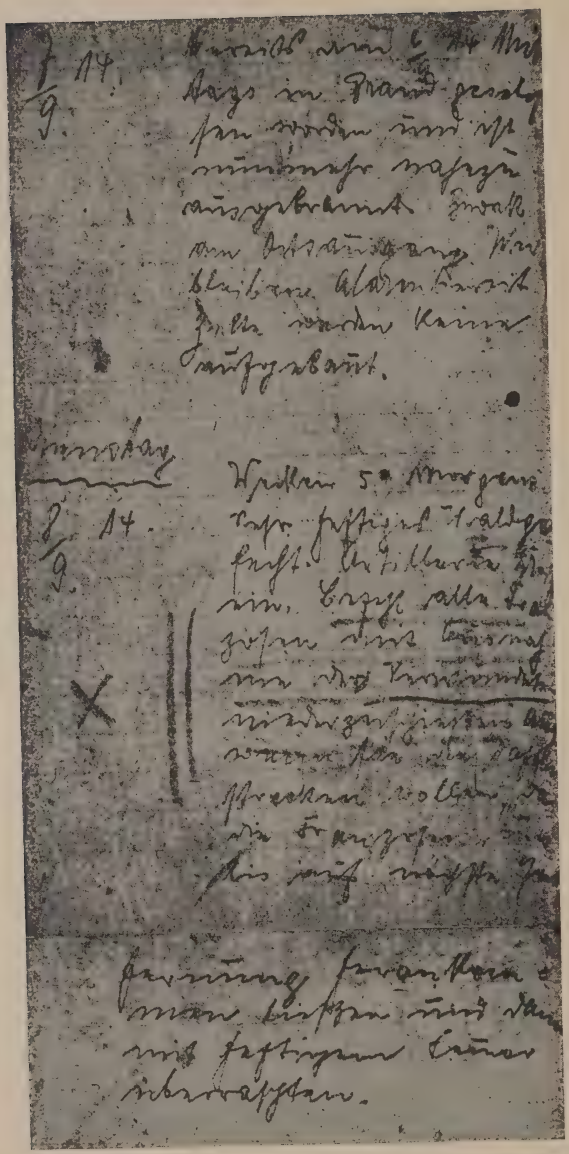
No. 21

No. 22

EXTRACT from the note-book of Heinrich Fröhlich, a Non-commissioned Officer of the 117th Regiment of Infantry, 3d Hessians, 18th Army Corps, recording the order to give no quarter.

"Dienstag 8/9,/14. Befehl alle Franzosen, mit Ausnahme der Verwundeten niederzuschiessen, auch wenn sie die Waffen strecken wollen, da die Franzosen uns bis auf nächste Entfernung herankommen liessen und dann mit heftigem Feuer überraschten."

"Tuesday, September 8, 1914. Order to shoot down all French soldiers save the wounded, even if they wish to lay down their arms, because the French let us come very near, and then surprised us by violent firing."



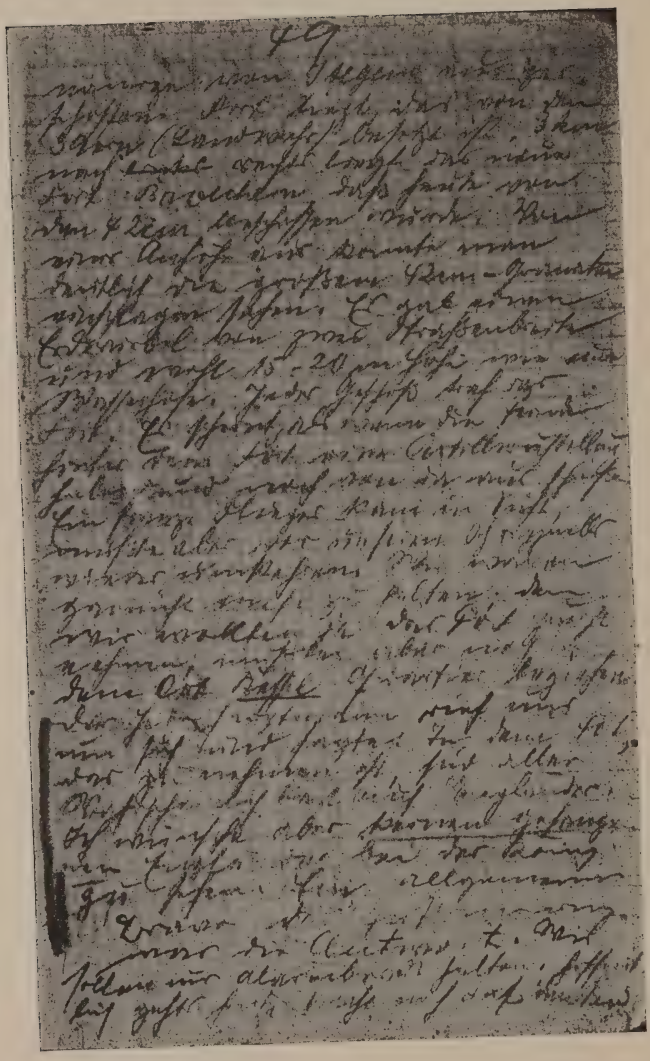
No. 22

No. 23

EXTRACT from the note-book of Göttsche, a Non-commissioned Officer of the 85th Regiment of Infantry, 9th Army Corps, recording the order to make no English prisoners.

"Wir wollten ja den Fort zuerst nehmen, mussten aber noch in dem Ort Kessel Quartier beziehen. Der Herr Hauptmann rief uns um und sagte: 'In dem Fort das zu nehmen ist, sind aller Wahrscheinlichkeit nach Engländer. Ich wünsche aber *keinen gefangenen* Engländer bei der Kompagnie zu sehen.' Ein allgemeines Bravo der Zustimmung war die Antwort."

"October 6, 1914. We wanted to take the fort at once, but we had first to camp at Kessel [to the east of Antwerp]. The captain called us round him and said: 'In the fort we are going to take there will very probably be English soldiers. But I don't wish to see any English prisoners with my company.' A general Bravo! of approval was the answer."



No. 23

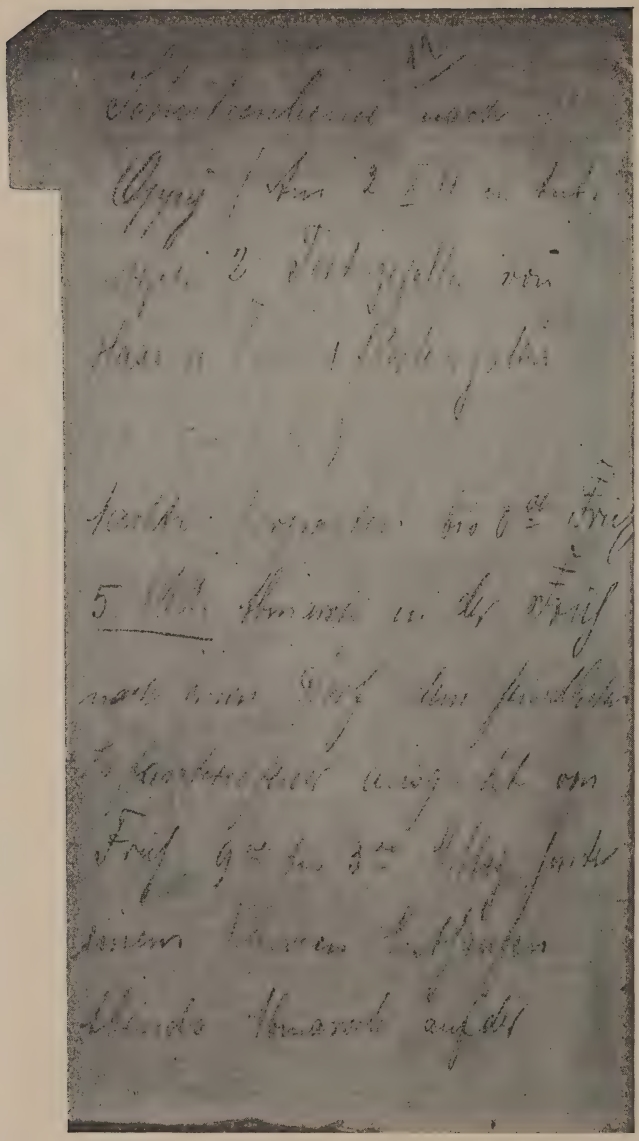
No. 24

EXTRACT from the diary of a private of the Reserve, Joh. Nusser, belonging to the 3d Bavarian Regiment, Reserve.

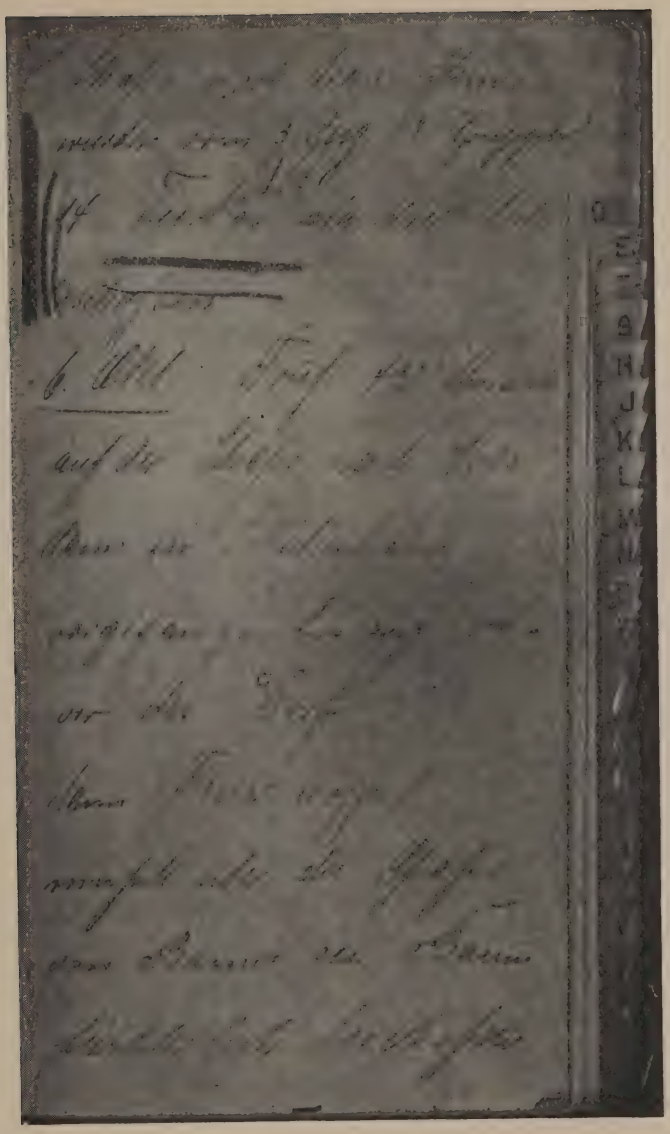
"5 Okt. Abends Abmarsch auf der Strasse nach Aras. Abends wurden vom 3 Zug (2 Gruppen) 14 Turkos standrechtlich erschossen."

October 5.

"At evening, start out on the road towards Arras. This evening two squads of the third section shot fourteen Turcos according to martial law."



No. 24



No. 24

No. 25

FRAGMENT OF A LETTER found on September 20, 1914, at l'Ecouvillon, in a German trench, recording the massacre of prisoners.

IM FELD; *16th September*, 1914.

". . . Frankreich wird bald fertig sein, denn sie haben ja keine Leute mehr alle Tage werden so und so viele gefangen genommen jetzt werden sie gleich Tod gemacht erschossen, denn wir haben so viele gefangen, dass wir es nicht wissen wo wir es hin tun sollen. Nun beschliesse ich mein Schreiben; indem ich auf baldige Antwort warte, verbleibe ich dein dich treu liebender.

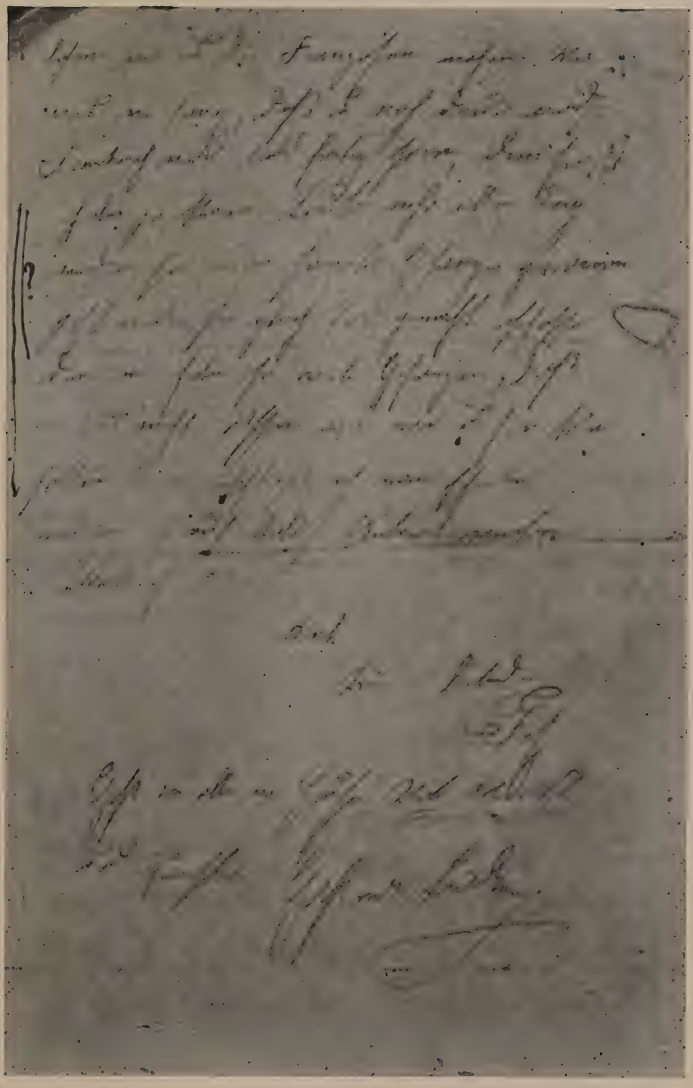
"G . . ."

IN THE FIELD; *16th September*, 1914.

". . . France will soon be at an end, for she has no more men. Every day we take so many, many prisoners. Now they are shot dead at once, for we have taken so many we don't know where to put them. Now I must end my letter. Hoping for a speedy reply, I remain,

"Your truly loving

"G . . ."



No. 25

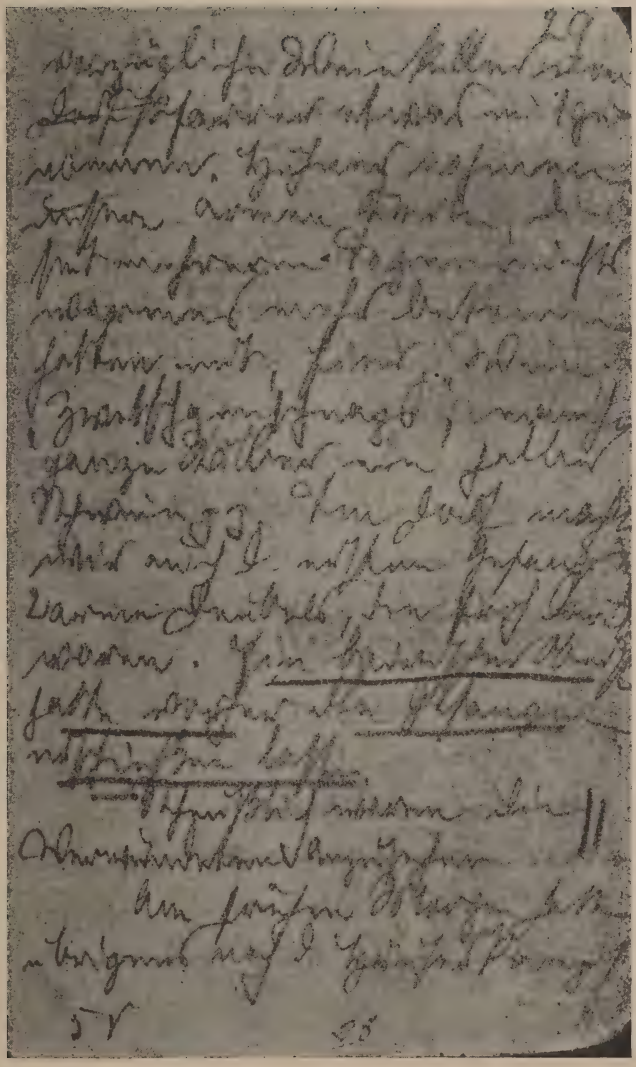
No. 26

EXTRACT from the diary of Lieut. Lindau, of the 13th (Hohenzollern) Regiment of Artillery, recording the massacre of French prisoners by the order of a Bavarian colonel.

"21 August. Im Dorf machten wir auch die ersten Gefangenen, 2 arme Teufels, die froh noch (?) waren. Ein baierischer Oberst hatte vorher die Gefangenen erschiessen lassen."

August 21.

"We took our first prisoners in the village, two poor devils who seemed delighted to be captured. Before this, prisoners had been shot by order of a Bavarian colonel."



No. 26

CHAPTER IV

LOOTING, ARSON, RAPE, MURDER

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

"The laws, rights, and duties of war apply not only to the army, but also to militia and volunteer corps fulfilling all the following conditions:

(1) *They must be commanded by a person responsible for his subordinates;*
(2) *They must have a fixed distinctive sign recognizable at a distance;*
(3) *They must carry arms openly; and*
(4) *They must conduct their operations in accordance with the laws and customs of war.*

"The inhabitants of a territory not under occupation, who, on the approach of the enemy, spontaneously take up arms to resist the invading troops without having had time to organize themselves in accordance with Article 1, *shall be regarded as belligerents, if they carry arms openly and if they respect the laws and customs of war."*

(Articles 1 and 2 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

"*Family honour and rights, individual life, and private property, as well as religious convictions and worship must be respected.*"

(Article 46 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

"*Pillage is expressly forbidden.*"

(Article 47 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

I. French Evidence

No. 27

MEMORANDUM addressed by the French Government to the Powers on August 19, 1914.

According to information which reached the Swiss Telegraphic Agency at Berne on the 15th of August, 1914, a communiqué from the *North German Gazette* states that: "Because France and Belgium, contrary to the law of nations, have organized the civil population to take part in the war, Germany has decided to adopt the most rigorous measures to put a stop to this, and leaves to France and to Belgium all the responsibility for the bloodshed which must necessarily follow."

The Government of the French Republic desires to record its protest against this allegation, which is merely a pretext adopted for the purpose of justifying the atrocities committed by the German troops, by giving

them the appearance of reprisals. From the very outset of the war the Germans have been in the habit of burning undefended villages and murdering their inhabitants. Numerous proofs of this fact exist in the letters and note-books taken from German soldiers either killed in action or captured. These irrefutable documents will be brought in due course to the knowledge of the Powers; in the meanwhile the French Government confines itself to giving, as an example, the following passage, textually reproduced from a note-book found upon the body of a German lieutenant: "We have burnt the church at Villerupt and shot the inhabitants. It was alleged that scouts had taken refuge in the church tower and that from there shots had been fired at our troops. The fact is, however, that it was not the inhabitants of Villerupt who fired at us, but certain excise-men and forest-rangers."

The French Government would, moreover, draw the attention of the Powers to the fact that there has been no "organization of the civil population to take part in the war," as the lying German communiqué alleges. France has no need of any such organization, inasmuch as the whole of her able-bodied male population is already bearing arms.

But if, moved by the desire to defend their hearths and homes, those Frenchmen who have not been called to the colours should of their own accord take up arms, the Government of the Republic would observe that

such action on their part is entirely lawful, by virtue of the terms of Article 2 of the Regulations attached to Convention 4 of The Hague, signed and ratified by Germany, which reads as follows:

"*The inhabitants of a territory not under occupation, who, on the approach of the enemy, spontaneously take up arms to resist the invading troops without having had time to organize themselves in accordance with Article* 1, *shall be regarded as belligerents, if they carry arms openly and if they respect the laws and customs of war.*"

The action of the inhabitants of a country who resist the invasion of their territory is therefore justified by the terms of the conventions of The Hague, and cannot be regarded as affording any pretext for the barbarous acts which the Germans have committted.

No. 28

DEPOSITION of Madame Dupuis, bookkeeper at Rouves (Meurthe-et-Moselle) on the murder of her husband.

August 24, 1914, *at* 8 A.M.

The undersigned Cacheux, Commissary of Police of the town of Commercy, reports that on the above he took down the statement of Madame Dupuis, born Louise Boulanger, 45 years old, bookkeeper and retail dealer at Rouves, as follows:

The undersigned reports that in the year 1914, on the 24th August at eight o'clock in the morning, he

took down the statement of Mme. Dupuis, born Louise Boulanger, 45 years of age, bookkeeper and retail dealer at Rouves.

Madame Dupuis stated:

On Thursday the 20th August, at ten o'clock in the morning, the Prussians having broken into our house dragged my husband into the street. An officer of the 8th Bavarian Regiment, who spoke French correctly, advanced towards him, and, without any provocation, fired twice at my husband, who fell stone dead. It should be stated that on the previous evening this officer had come to ask my husband the numbers of the French regiments which were then in the region of Nomeny. They had threatened to shoot him because he was unable to give them this information.

Immediately after committing this murder, the Germans set fire to our house and also burnt those of several of our neighbours.

This statement is confirmed by several other inhabitants of the town.

(*Signed*) CACHEUX.
Commissary of Police

Certified correct and signed by the Sub-Prefect, who was present when the above declarations were made.

(*Signed*) SOUS-PRÉFET.

No. 29

EXTRACTS from an official Police Report of the burning of the village of Diarupt (Vosges).

On this day, the 28th September, 1914, at seven o'clock, we, the undersigned, Paul Vaissière and Jean Seigne, Mounted Police attached to the Provostship of the 66th Reserve Division of Infantry, wearing our uniforms and acting upon the orders of our superior officers, beg to report that in accordance with an order issued by the General commanding the 66th Reserve Division, under date 26th September, 1914, we proceeded directly to Wisembach (Vosges) where, on the same day, the following statements were made to us:

1. Madame Eugène Vendling, born Mathilde Jacquet, 45 years of age, schoolmistress (at one o'clock):

"The day before yesterday, about nine o'clock in the morning, that is to say, on September 25, after a violent bombardment of the village which had lasted several days and had already destroyed the factory of the commune where some hundred workmen were employed, four houses, and the church, the Germans arrived in the village of Diarupt; according to statements made by the inhabitants, they then set fire to seven houses in the village, namely: those of Grevisse (Beau-Soleil farm, in the commune); Hinderze, Sertelet, Noël Quirin, Kubler, Ribiche, and Marchal. The majority of the injured inhabitants fled to the neighbouring villages, with the exception of the Marchal,

Ribiche, and Noël Quirin families, whom the Germans carried off with them as prisoners to Sainte-Marie-aux-Mines, and released today.

"On Saturday, August 29, M. Eugène Vendling, schoolmaster and mayoral secretary at Wisembach, and M. Pierrat, the parish priest, were carried off by the Germans and taken with a strong guard towards Sainte-Marie-aux-Mines. They had already been under arrest the whole of the preceding night, from 8 in the evening to 5.30 the next morning, at the German police-station in the village; why, I know not.

"After the occupation of the village, the Germans declared that civilians concealed in the house of Aubert, a postman, whose occupants had fled for the moment, had fired upon German soldiers. Accordingly on Wednesday, August 26th, and Thursday, August 27th, they forced my husband and the parish priest to accompany them into this house; there they tried to terrorize them, with fixed bayonets, insisting, in spite of all proofs to the contrary, that civilians had murdered their men. My husband and the priest did all they could to persuade them that this was not possible, but as in spite of everything they persisted in believing, or chose to believe, what they had stated, the Germans must have declared these two innocent persons suspect, and have ordered them to be strictly watched.

"They put an evil construction on everything they

did, even their most trivial actions, and even on the steps they took to exhort the inhabitants to be calm during the occupation of the village, as well as the authorized looting of their houses.

"Three days after the departure of M. Vendling and the priest, the Germans returned to the vicarage at ten o'clock in the evening to fetch Jean-Baptiste Bertone, Joseph Patris, and Eugène Carasol. The priest had received the two latter under his roof, as their own houses had been burnt. But Carasol had for some days past been sleeping at Kubler's shop, which he had rented. The Germans declared that these two men were making signals to the French from the church tower—an absurd statement, as the thing was impossible. They took these peaceful civilians also off towards Sainte-Marie. This happened on Wednesday, September 2.

"In all these arrests the Germans seemed to show great animus, and any one who exercised the smallest influence at once became suspect to them. This, in my opinion, was the reason of the arrest of M. Vendling, schoolmaster, and of M. Pierrat, the parish priest. Their families hope that the German Government will soon order their release, as it has done in the case of the village hostages, who have now returned from Strasburg, where they saw M. Vendling and our priest."

(*Signed*) Madame Vendling.

2. Mlle. Maria Ribiche, 53 years of age, householder in the hamlet of Diarupt (1.30 P.M.):

"On the 24th inst. at about eight o'clock in the morning, some fifty German soldiers made their appearance in the village, which they had evacuated on the previous evening. Having entered my house, one of them, who spoke French well, said to me, 'You must leave your house immediately, for we have been sent here by the General to burn seven buildings.' With these words they sprinkled petroleum over my linen and set fire to it in my presence. I got my cattle out of the barn and they were all that I could save."

(*Signed*) MLLE. RIBICHE.

3. M. Jean Marchal, 53 years of age, landed proprietor in the village of Diarupt (2 P.M.):

"The day before yesterday about fifty German soldiers came to my house, and one of them, who spoke French well, said to me, 'We have been sent by the General to burn seven houses in this village; therefore if you wish to save your linen you had better get it out.' We got out a few things necessary for our use, and immediately afterwards they set fire to the rooms with straw, which they had previously sprinkled with petroleum. They informed me that they did this because we had given lodging to some *Chasseurs Alpins*, who might have fired on them when passing through the forest.

This is absolutely untrue, for these very Germans had occupied my house, and had complete control of it for the last fortnight."

(*Signed*) MARCHAL.

4. M. Hinterze, 62 years of age, landowner in the hamlet of Diarupt (2.15 P.M.):

"On Thursday at eight o'clock twelve Germans came to my house and told me they had come to burn it, because I had given lodging to some soldiers of the *Chasseurs Alpins*. I tried to tell them that this was not true, but they told me to keep silent, pointing their revolvers at my breast, and they set fire to the furniture in my presence. While they were setting fire to the neighbouring houses, I was able to save two or three sheets, and these are all that I possess."

(*Signed*) HINTERZE.

The owners of the other buildings burnt were not to be found; we were therefore unable to proceed further with our inquiry.

Of the houses which were burnt nothing remains but the four walls, the rest being completely destroyed and reduced to ashes.

In testimony of which facts we have drawn up the present report in one copy in conformity with Article 117 of the decree of the 31st July, 1911, having reference to police duties in rural districts.

Done and concluded at Fraize on the day, month, and year above mentioned.

(*Signed*) SEIGNE.
(*Signed*) VAISSIÈRE.

B

SECOND REPORT

September 28, 1914, 10 *o'clock.*

We the undersigned, Paul Vaissière and Jean Seigne, Mounted Police of the 66th Reserve Division, wearing our uniform, and in compliance with orders from our superior officers, report that in completion of Report No. 12 of September 26, 1914, we received yesterday, the 27th inst., the following declarations:

1. M. Jean Sertelet, 67 years of age, landed proprietor in the village of Diarupt in the commune of Wisembach (Vosges), at eight o'clock:

"On Thursday morning, the 24th instant, some German soldiers entered my house suddenly and said, 'Get out of this immediately.' I asked leave to put on my shoes, but they would not give me time to do so; they pushed me out, pointing their revolvers at my breast and saying, 'If you stir, we'll burn you.'

"Soon after I had gone out, they went up into a room on the first floor where my invalid wife was lying and dragged her out of her bed and out of the house without giving her time to finish dressing. They then sprinkled the rooms with petroleum and set fire to the house, beginning in the cellar.

"We looked on at this sight under threats from them, and they then took me with my wife and daughter with them for the distance of about a kilometre. As my wife could walk no farther, they dragged her along for another half-hour or so, and then left her at a farm.

"They left my daughter, aged 17, with her, and took me to Sainte-Marie.

"When I arrived at this place, I was put into the police station and offered some soup and black bread. I slept that night on the bare boards, and the next day they gave me the safe-conduct you see, enabling me to rejoin my family.

"I have nothing left but the clothes I wear, nor have my wife and daughter."

(*Signed*) SERTELET.

2. Madame Maria Poireau, wife of Sertelet, 61 years of age, householder of the same place, at 8.20:

"On Thursday last, about eight o'clock in the morning, some Prussians burst into my bedroom, and in spite of my illness and infirmity, they dragged me out of bed and out of the house, scarcely giving me time to dress. It is true that one of them who spoke French helped me to bandage my arm. Scarcely was I outside when my house began to burn. The rooms had already been sprinkled with petroleum in my presence.

"I looked on for a short time at the fire, threatened by their revolvers, which they pointed at my breast.

Then they carried me off with my husband and daughter in the direction of Sainte-Marie. When we began to ascend the hill I could go no farther, so they dragged me along for a further distance of 2 kilometres, afterwards leaving me in a farm with my daughter. We slept there, and returned the next day to Wisembach.

"When they brought me down from my room, my husband tried to go back to fetch a perambulator, but they thrust him out, pushing him and striking him with their fists. In the neighbouring houses they asked for petroleum to make these burn faster.

"When they were taking me towards the hill, I said to them repeatedly: 'Kill me, but do not make me suffer any more.'"

(*Signed*) MADAME SERTELET.

3. Madame Louise Vincent, 55 years of age, wife of Grevise, a farmer, of Beau Soleil, village of Diarupt (at 9.15):

"On Thursday morning four German soldiers appeared on the front steps of the farm, with weapons in their hands, and addressing my husband said: 'Make haste and get out your cattle, we have come to set fire to the house.' At these words, I took one of them by the hand, imploring him to spare our house, but he replied: 'No, it's the law, and we have come by order on purpose to burn it.' They at once fetched hay from the barn, strewed it about the rooms and set fire to it,

after sprinkling it with petroleum they forced me to give them. In a short time all the buildings, including the dwelling-house, the barn, and the cattle-sheds, were in flames, and we were able to save nothing but the cattle.

"They did not take us away, as they had the other inhabitants."

(*Signed*) Louise Vincent.

4. Madame Marie Quirin, wife of Noël Quirin, 40 years of age, householder of the village of Diarupt (10 o'clock):

"On Thursday morning I went to Kubler's house, in the village of Diarupt, where my father, my mother, and an aunt were living; I carried away my linen, and took my cattle with me. As soon as I arrived I saw six or seven German soldiers behind the house, who ordered us to leave immediately. A moment after we saw smoke issuing from the windows, so we asked leave to take the cattle out of the barn, which they permitted. While the buildings were burning, they set out with us in the direction of Sainte-Marie by way of the hill. When we arrived there they gave us some soup and some black bread, but they did not ill-treat us. Nothing is left of our home."

(*Signed*) Marie Quirin.

5. Madame Delphine Dijon, wife of Quirin, made a deposition similar to that of her daughter.

6. Mlle. Finance, 19 years of age, householder at Wisembach (10.30):

"On Thursday, about nine o'clock in the morning, seeing Madame Quirin's cattle going down the slope from the village of Diarupt, I thought they were straying, and went to tell her. I met a German soldier, and ran away, whereupon he fired at me twice, but did not hit me. I ran back to my house in great terror, and a few moments later I saw that the houses in the village were on fire."

(*Signed*) MARIE FINANCE.

In testimony whereof we have drawn up the above report, sending one copy, as directed by Article 117 of the decree of July 31, 1913, on the duties of the rural police.

Done and concluded at Fraize, on the day and month given above.

(*Signed*) SEIGNE, VAISSIÈRE.

No. 30

EXTRACTS from an enquiry into the burning and looting of Raon-l'Étape (Vosges).

A

FIRST REPORT

On the 14th October, 1914, I, Émile Jamard, Commissary of Police of the town of Raon-l'Étape, attached to the judicial branch of the force, assisting the Public Prosecutor, in pursuance of our investigation, took down the statement

of Madame Jeanne Picard, 31 years of age, wife of Lucien Michel, merchant, of Rue Beauregard. Her statement is as follows:

"I did not leave Raon-l'Étape during the German occupation.

"There were several German soldiers billeted on my parents; amongst these men there was one whose special duty it seemed to be to set fire to the houses of Raon. It was particularly noticeable that he carried a tin box containing some very inflammable substance, probably a compound of tow and petroleum. Every time that he came back from one of his evil missions, he would show me the house which he had just burnt.

"On several occasions I saw the soldiers removing all the contents of various houses, in particular those of M. Brajon and M. Martin-Dorget. In this way they removed several van loads of household effects."

The above having been read to the witness was confirmed and signed by her.

(*Signed*) JEANNE MICHEL.

JAMARD.
Commissary of Police.

B

SECOND REPORT

On the 15th October, 1914, I, Émile Jamard, Commissary of Police of the town of Raon-l'Étape, attached to the judicial branch of the force, assisting the Public Prosecutor

in pursuance of our investigation, took down the following statement of M. Charles Gimet, 56 years of age, Municipal Councillor, residing in the Avenue of the 25th Battalion of Chasseurs. His statement is as follows:

"During the German occupation I remained at Raon-l'Étape, where I fulfilled the duties of the Mayor, the latter having left the town upon the approach of the enemy.

"On several occasions I noticed a woman, who, to judge by her dress, seemed to be of good position, taking part with German officers in the looting of houses; on one occasion I saw her coming out of the house of M. Ferry, the lawyer, with her arms full of clothes and other objects. In these foraging expeditions she had with her several motor-cars and common carriages.

"On the day of their arrival at Raon-l'Étape, the Germans shot and killed an old man, 75 years of age, M. Richard, residing in the Rue Wesval, who was looking out of his window at the time. A few days afterwards they also killed a retired Customs Officer, M. Huck, 55 years of age, residing in the Rue Thiers, who was trying to escape them; they threw his body into the river."

The above read to the witness, M. Gimet, who has confirmed and signed it.

(*Signed*) GIMET.

JAMARD.
Commissary of Police.

No. 31

POLICE REPORT concerning a murder and two outrages committed near La Ferté-Gaucher (Seine-et-Marne).

September 23, 1914, at 10 o'clock.

We the undersigned, Auguste François Guillin, head Quartermaster, and Victor Hornard, Police Officer, at the station of La Ferté-Gaucher, Seine-et-Marne, wearing our uniform, and carrying out the orders of our superior officers contained in Note No. 996 of our squadron commander dated September 18, 1914, directing us to make an inquiry into the crimes and offences committed by the Germans and other soldiers in the commune of La Ferté-Gaucher, took down the following depositions:

1. M. Larieux, vice-mayor of La Ferté-Gaucher and acting as mayor in the absence of that official, declares as follows:

"On Sunday the 6th instant, the Germans went to the house of M. Q . . . , owner of the Château de la . . . , Commune of La Ferté-Gaucher, where they lunched. In the evening they returned intoxicated; they then violated the young woman Y . . . and Madame X . . . , agriculturist, who had taken refuge at the Château. Seeing this, M. Q . . . fired a revolver at them, without hitting them, whereupon they immediately shot him dead.

"I cannot give the details of this scene, as I was myself taken prisoner by the Germans the evening before."

(*Signed*) LARIEUX.

2. Mlle. Y . . . of . . . , Commune of La Ferté-Gaucher, declares as follows:

"On Sunday the 6th instant, a German officer and a military cyclist of the same nationality arrived about two o'clock at the Château . . . , belonging to M. Q . . . , aged 77. They asked M. Q . . . for luncheon. He granted their request and received them civilly. About an hour later two German cavalry soldiers arrived, and then they all left at about 3.30 P.M. The same day, about seven o'clock, these four Germans returned, apparently very drunk, especially the officer. They began by firing through the iron gate; one of the watch-dogs was hit by a bullet, and had to be killed.

"M. Q . . . went and opened the gate, and the officer asked for dinner for four men, and beds. As we had no more bread in the house, we cooked eggs and potatoes for them. But as my master refused to put them up for the night, they began to fire off their guns in the rooms. While I was cooking the dinner the Germans forced Madame X . . . , who had taken refuge here, to go up into the attic. They stripped her, and stole her purse containing thirty francs; then they violated her. Seeing this, M. Q . . . fetched a revolver and fired in their direction from the bottom of the stairs, but he did not hit them; they immediately shot him dead; one bullet went through his head, and

two or three others into his chest. Greatly terrified, I fled to the farm belonging to the Château, but the officer came after me, saying that if I did not return with him he would burn the Château and the farm and kill all the inhabitants. In terror of my life, I accordingly followed him, and he made me go to bed with him. As to Madame X . . . , the officer handed her over to the three soldiers, who took her into a barn, where she had to spend the night with them. The next day, September 7th, they all left about 8 o'clock."

(*Signed*) Y . . .

3. Madame X . . . , Commune of La Ferté-Gaucher, declares:

"On September 4, 1914, my husband and I left our home to flee from the Germans. On the way we met a man who was also escaping, and he proposed that we should go with him to the farm rented by M. H . . . , a tenant of M. Q . . . . This farmer gave us shelter for two days, and as my husband came back here on Sunday, September 6th, M. Q . . . invited me to take my meals with him on that day. I was at his house when, about 3 o'clock, two German military cyclists arrived, one of them an officer, and demanded luncheon. About an hour later two German cavalry soldiers arrived, and they then all went off together, returning in the evening at about 7 o'clock. They began by firing through the iron gate, which M. Q . . . went

himself to open. We then noticed that they were drunk, especially the officer. They asked for dinner, and the maid cooked eggs and potatoes for them. When M. Q . . . declined to put them up for the night they began to fire their guns in the house to frighten him. Much alarmed, I hid on the staircase leading to the attic, at the side of the room where they were; they found me there, and they made me go up to the attic, where they stripped me naked and stole my purse containing 30 francs. The officer and two soldiers then outraged me, after threatening me with their guns. To put an end to this scene, M. Q . . . fired a revolver from the bottom of the stairs; the Germans then fired upon him and killed him. They then made me come down, and the officer again outraged me, as well as the maid Y . . . ; then he sent me to spend the night in the barn with the three soldiers, while he forced the maid Y . . . to go to bed with him. The officer aimed his revolver at us several times, and he looked about for petroleum to fire the Château and the farm. They all went off the next morning about 8 o'clock."

(*Signed*) X . . .

Of all the above we have drawn up three copies for despatch, one to the Sous-Préfet of Coulommiers, another to the general commanding the 3rd and 4th subdivisions at Meaux, and the third to our district commander, in compliance with Article 298 of the Decree of May 20, 1903.

Done and concluded at La Ferté-Gaucher, on the day, year, and month given above.

(*Signed*) HORNARD, GUILLIN.

No. 32

POLICE REPORT concerning the murder of a young girl of Esternay (Marne) by a German soldier.

February 27, 1915, at 6 P.M.

We the undersigned, Henri Georges Petiot, Sergeant, and Emile Jules-Henri Dunel, Mounted Police probationer, at the station of Esternay (Marne), wearing our uniform and acting under the orders of our superior officers, in virtue of the instructions of the Minister of War transmitted to the Public Prosecutor at Epernay, touching an inquiry into the crimes and acts of destruction committed by the Germans at Epernay, held an inquiry in the Commune of Esternay into the circumstances of the death of Mlle. Marcel Bouché, aged 27, who was shot by a German soldier in the night of September 6–7, 1914.

We took down the following depositions on the subject:

Madame Macé, widow, born Mélanie Nodot, 59 years of age, of independent means, living at Esternay (Marne):

"During the battle of Esternay, September 6, 1914, I had taken refuge in the basement of my house, together with Madame Lhomme, the widowed Madame Bouché, and her two daughters.

"About 11 P.M., after my house had been already occupied for some time by the enemy, three German soldiers came down into the basement. There they drank or took all they chose, and finally they discovered us in a kind of smaller cellar in which we had taken refuge.

"As this inner cellar was very small, measuring only about 1 metre 20 cm., Madame Bouché and I, standing at the entrance, filled it up entirely. Madame Lhomme and Madame Bouché's two daughters were seated behind us.

"One of the soldiers took me by the arm and brought me out of the cellar, saying: 'We not hurt grandmother'; the other two placed themselves at the entrance of the cellar and ordered the other women, in bad French, to take off their clothes. Seeing that no one stirred, one of the soldiers pointed his gun at the women. Madame Bouché, still standing at the entrance, threw up the muzzle of the gun with her arm, but the soldier then put it under Madame Bouché's arm and fired.

"Madame Lhomme, wounded in the left elbow, and Mlle. Bouché, wounded in the shoulder, screamed, and the soldiers then ran away. The one who was at the entrance of the cellar, but who had not fired went up last, walking backwards and covering us with his revolver.

"Madame Lhomme's wound has healed; Mlle. Bouché died on the following day.

"I do not know to which regiment these soldiers belonged."

Madame Lhomme, born Juliette Rambouillet, 33 years of age, householder at Esternay:

"When the three German soldiers presented themselves at the entrance of the cellar where we had taken refuge (Madame Macé, Madame Bouché, her two daughters, and myself), they were confronted by Madame Macé and Madame Bouché, who were standing in the doorway.

"As Madame Macé was old, one of them took her by the arm and led her into the passage; the other two placed themselves before us and said: 'Strip yourselves naked at once,' but no one moved. The soldier on the right then pointed his gun at us; Madame Bouché pushed up the muzzle into the air, but the soldier, at once bringing it down again, fired. The bullet glanced off my left elbow and struck Mlle. Bouché on the left shoulder. My wound was not serious, but Mlle. Bouché's was mortal."

Madame Bouché, widow, born Berthe Arlinson, 46 years of age, innkeeper at Esternay:

"On September 6, 1914, about 11 P.M., three German soldiers presented themselves at the entrance of the

cellar where I had taken refuge with my two daughters, Madame Lhomme, and Madame Macé. The latter was led away by a soldier. The two other Germans then ordered us to strip, but seeing that we did not obey, one of them pointed his gun at us. I threw it up with my arm, but the soldier immediately put it between my arm and my body and fired at the three other women. Madame Lhomme and my daughter were struck by the same bullet, for they were close one behind the other.

"Seeing that my daughter was seriously wounded I went to the church of Esternay where the German ambulance was stationed, and asked for a doctor to attend to her. At my entreaties, more than seven hours later a German surgeon or hospital orderly came and dressed the wound hastily.

"My daughter died on September 9 at 5 o'clock, as the ambulance attendants of the French, who had retaken the village, were carrying her on a stretcher."

Madame Louvet, born Gabrielle Bouché, 25 years of age, grocer of Esternay, made a deposition similar to that of her mother.

The deceased was Mlle. Marcelle Bouché, spinster, aged 27, innkeeper at Esternay (Marne), born April 22, 1887, at the said place, daughter of the late Henri Bouché and Berthe Arlinson. Two copies made, one sent to the Minister of War, the other to the Police Commandant of the district.

(*Signed*) DUNEL, PETIOT.

II. German Evidence

No. 33

PLACARD posted on the walls of Lunéville by order of the German authorities.

NOTICE TO THE POPULATION

On the 25th August, 1914, the inhabitants of Lunéville made an ambushed attack against German troops and trains. On the same day the inhabitants fired on certain quarters used by the Medical Staff, over which the Red Cross was flying. Moreover, the German wounded have been fired on, as well as the Military Hospital, which contained a German ambulance.

On account of these hostile acts, a fine of 650,000 francs is imposed upon the commune of Lunéville.

The Mayor is ordered to hand over this sum to the representative of the German military authorities, in gold or in silver, up to an amount of 50,000 francs, by 9 o'clock on the morning of the 6th September, 1914. No protests will be entertained and no delay will be allowed. If the commune does not punctually carry out the order to pay this sum of 650,000 francs, all movable property will be seized.

In case of non-payment, house-to-house searches will take place and the persons of all the inhabitants also will be searched. Every one will be shot who deliberately conceals money, or who endeavours to hide goods

from seizure by the military authorities, or who attempts to leave the town.

The Mayor and the hostages taken by the military authorities will be held responsible for strict compliance with these orders.

The Mayor is ordered to notify these instructions to the Commune without delay.

HÉNAMÉNIL, September 3, 1914.

VON FASBENDER,
General Commanding.

No. 34

PLACARD posted on the walls of Reims by order of the German authorities.

PROCLAMATION

In the event of an engagement taking place today or in the near future, either in the vicinity of Reims or within the town itself, the inhabitants are warned that they must remain absolutely quiet and refrain from attempting in any way to take part in the battle. They must not attempt to attack either single soldiers or detachments of the German army. It is strictly forbidden to erect any barricades or to disturb the pavements of the streets in such a way as to interfere with the going and coming of troops; in a word, nothing whatsoever must be done which may be prejudicial in any way to the German army.

In order to assure the security of the troops sufficiently, and to answer for the quiet behaviour of the population of Reims, the persons hereinafter named have been taken as hostages by the officer commanding the German army. On the slightest attempt at disorder these hostages will be hanged. In the same way, should any violation occur of the instructions above laid down, the city will be entirely or partially burnt and its inhabitants hanged.

On the other hand, if the city remains absolutely quiet and peaceful, the hostages and all the inhabitants will be taken under the protection of the German army.

By Order of the German Authorities.

Dr. Langlet,
Mayor.

Reims, *September* 12, 1914.

LIST OF HOSTAGES

MESSRS.	MESSRS.
Guernier, Secretary, Labour Exchange.	Weiland, Assessor, 7 Rue Honzeau-Muiron.
H. Pérot, Assessor at the Municipality.	Mathieu, Sub-Secretary of the Labour Exchange, Town Hall.
Ducrot, President of the Co-operative Society, 15 Rue de Sebastopol.	Bernard Cahen, 90 Rue de Barbâtre.
Menu, Secretary of the Syndicate, 106 Rue Gambetta.	Roger, 126 Rue Ponsardin.
P. Jolly, Assessor, 7 Rue Macquart.	Dézavenelle, 1 Rue Charlier.
Thomas, 294 Rue de Cernay.	Déragon, 1 Boulevard Carteret.
Cabey, of the Labour Exchange.	Jean Laurent, Town Hall.
	Coton, 40 Rue des Moulins.
	Sacy, 41 Rue de l'Université.
	Vasseur, 4 Rue Legendre.

LIST OF HOSTAGES—*Continued*

MESSRS.

Taisne, 20 Rue Favart-d'Herbigny.
Bardet, 30 Rue Charlier.
Boucher, 51 Rue Boucher-de-Perthes.
Porgeon, 16 Faubourg Cérès.
Lasseron, North Cemetery.
Blondiaux, Town Hall.
Bara, Town Hall.
Halbutier, Town Hall.
Martin, 15 Rue Legendre.
Devingt, 126 Avenue de Laon.
Nocton, 38 Rue Croutelle.
Périn, 91 Faubourg Cérès.
Lucin, Town Hall.
Baudvin, 27 Rue du Mont-d'Arène.
Urby, 147 Rue Croix St. Marc.
Delouvin, Rue du Champ-de-Mars.
Davesne, café proprietor, 3 Rue Bonhomme.
Baudry, 68 Rue du Mont-d'Arène.
Hagon, 3 Rue Gambetta.
Bricogne, 5 Rue de l'Arbalète.
Ruhlmann, 6 Faubourg Cérès.
Dieudonné, 53 Rue de Mars.
Vergniolle, 50 Rue de Bétheny.
Debay, 3 Rue Trudaine.
The Manager of Mauroy's, 30 Rue de Mars.
Albert Benoist, 35 Boulevard de la République.
Leon Collet, 2 Rue de l'Ecu.
Vanier, Rue Linguet.
Drancourt, Rue Cérès.

MESSRS.

Raymond, 13 Rue Cérès.
Duchateaux, 22 Justice.
Kanengieser, 2 Trois-Raisinets.
Lorin, 2 Rue Bétheny.
Cahen, 79 Boulevard de la République.
Fribourg, Rue du Cadran-Saint-Pierre.
Fournier, 2 Rue de Mars.
Pétremont, 2 Rue Carnot.
Georges Bonnet, 42 Place d'Erlon.
Princiaux, 14 Rue St.-Maurice.
Classen, 38 Rue des Capucins.
Mulatier, Grand Hôtel, 4 Rue Libergier.
Hennequin, 57 Rue de Thillois.
Mirguet, 19 Rue Petit-Roland.
Patoux, 25 Chaussée du Port.
Soufflet, 21 Avenue de Laon.
Pannetier, 1 Rue Neufchâtel.
Gardez, 2 Rue de Pouilly.
Hansen, 21 Rue du Tambour.
Hermann, 83 Rue de Cernay.
Hugot, 19 Rue du Bastion.
Malézieux, 197 Faubourg Cérès.
Putz, 22 Rue de Mars.
Hubert-Lacour, 3 Rue Clicquot-Blervache.
Colmart, 9 Place St. Timothée.
Michel Félix, 28 Rue Petit-Roland.
Henri Abelé, 1 Rue Ecole de Médecine.

Abbé Camus, Rue du Clou-dans-le-Fer.

LIST OF HOSTAGES—*Continued*

MESSRS.	MESSRS.
Godefroid, Rue Cérès.	Abbé Andrieu, 4 Rue du Préau.
Albert Poullot, 6 Place Barrée.	Abbé Fournier, 17 Rue Périn.
V. Marteau, 49 Rue Jeanne d'Arc.	Abbé Debuquois.
	Abbé Maîtrehut, St.-Rémi.

And several others.

No. 35

AUTOGRAPH STATEMENT of a Westphalian prisoner concerning the murder of two women and a child shot at Metten (Belgium) by order of Major Kastendick and the Reservist, Captain Dültingen, both of the 57th Regiment of Prussian Infantry.

A

CAPTAIN BOURDI, Commandant at the Fortress of Quiberon-Penthièvre, to Lieutenant-Colonel Baudry, Commandant of the dépot for prisoners of war at Belle-Isle.

QUIBERON, *February* 24, 1915.

I have the honour to enclose herewith the original with a translation, of the statement voluntarily written on February 13, 1915, by a German prisoner interned at Fort Penthièvre.

This deposition describes an act of cruelty committed by order of two officers, at Metten, Belgium, on two women and a child of about 5 years old.

The prisoner, X . . . , overcome, no doubt, by remorse,[1] confessed the deed to his comrades, and it thus came indirectly to my knowledge.

In the absence of the judicial police officer who would have taken down the deposition, Interpreter Desprès went, at my request, to Fort Penthièvre, to get confirmation of the rumours that had reached us. In conversation with the interpreter, the prisoner X . . . related the circumstance above mentioned quite freely, and voluntarily wrote the statement I now send you, to be used as you may think proper.

(*Signed*) BOURDI.

B

STATEMENT made by the prisoner X . . .

Wir brachen in einem Hause ein in Metten da wurde aus einem Hause geschossen, wir brachen in dem Hause ein und bekamen den Befehl das Haus zu untersuchen, aber wir fanden nichts in dem Hause wie 2 Frauen mit einem Kind. Es wurde aber von meinen Kameraden gesagt das die beiden Frauen geschossen hatten und

[1] The prisoner's name is suppressed in consideration of his remorse.

wir fanden auch einige Waffen nämlich Revolwer. Ich habe aber nicht gesehen das die Frauen geschossen hatten. Es wurde aber den Frauen gesagt es passierte ihr nichts da die Frauen zu sehr weinten. Wir holten die Frauen heraus und brachten die Frauen zum Major, da erhielten wir den Befehl die Frauen zu erschiessen.

Der Major hiess Kastendick und gehörte dem 57. Infanterie Regiment. Als nun die Mutter tot war befahl der Major das Kind zu erschiessen weil das Kind nicht allein auf der Welt bleiben sollte und das wie die Mutter erschossen wurde hielt das Kind die Mutter noch bei der Hand so das Kind mit zurückgezogen wurde. Dem Kind wurden auch die Augen zugebunden. Ich habe die Wahrheit geschrieben, ich habe selbst das mitgemacht weil wir den Befehl vom Major Kastendick und vom Reserve Hauptmann Dültingen bekamen.

(*Unterzeichnet*) X . . .

Soldat 57. Inf. Rgt. zur Zeit Kriegsgefangener in Fort Penthièvre, in Quiberon.

N.S. Es tat mir sehr leit als ich das sah. Dabei standen mir die Tränen in den Augen.

X . . .

Penthièvre, *den* 13. *Februar*, 1915.

Translation

We broke into a house at Metter.[1] Shots had been

[1] Near Verviers, Belgium.

fired from a house. We broke into a house, and we were ordered to search the house, but we found nothing in the house but two women and a child. But my comrades said that the two women had fired, and we found some arms too, revolvers. But I did not see the women fire. But the women were told nothing would be done to them, because they were crying so bitterly. We brought the women out and took them to the major, and then we were ordered to shoot the women.

The major was called Kastendick and belonged to the 57th Regiment of Infantry. When the mother was dead the major gave the order to shoot the child, so that the child should not be left alone in the world, and when the mother was shot the child was still holding her hand, and as she fell she pulled the child over with her. The child's eyes were bandaged. I have written the truth. I took part in this, because we were ordered to do it by Major Kastendick and Captain Dültingen.

(*Signed*) X . . .,

Private in the 57th Regiment of Infantry, now a prisoner at Fort Penthièvre, Quiberon.

P.S. It grieved me very much to see this. I had tears in my eyes.

X . . .

PENTHIÈVRE, *February* 13, 1915.

No. 36

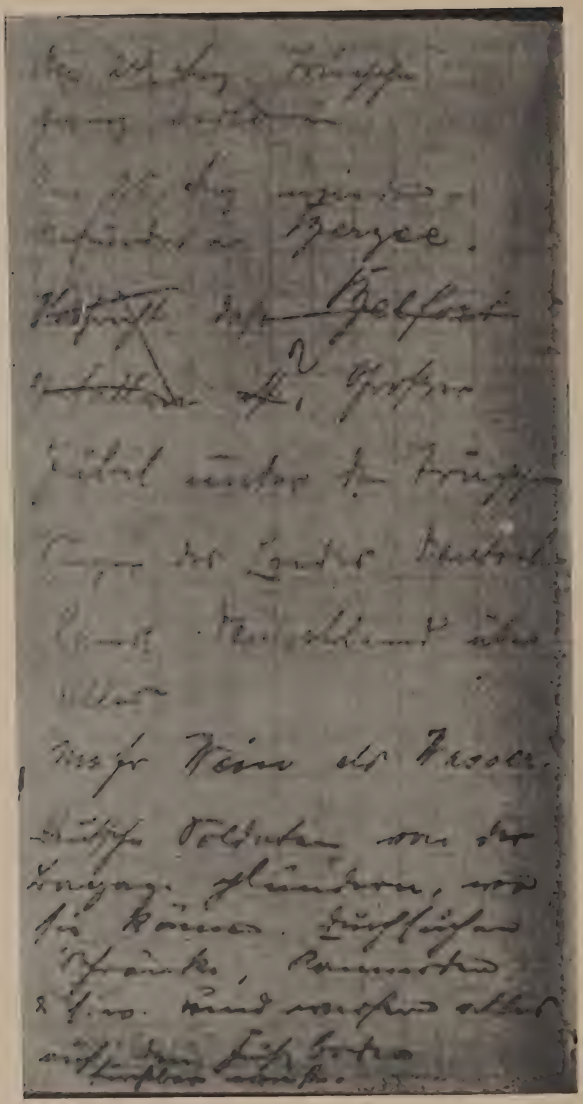
EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Albers, of the 78th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, describing looting.

"Am 24. Aug. Truppe ganz verloren. Am 25. Aug. wiedergefunden in Berzee. Nachricht dass Belfort gefallen ist. Grosser Jubel under den Truppen. Singen das Lied *Deutschland, Deutschland über Alles.*

"Mehr Wein als Wasser. Deutsche Soldaten von der Bagage plündern, wo sie können. Durchsuchen Schränke, Kommoden u.s.w. und werfen alles auf den Fussboden. Furchtbar wüst.

"Aug. 24, lost touch with my company. Aug. 25, found them again at Berzee [south of Charleroi]. News of the fall of Belfort. Great rejoicing among the troops. They sing *Deutschland, Deutschland über Alles.*

"More wine than water. The German soldiers of the baggage-train loot wherever they can. They overhaul cupboards, drawers, etc., and throw everything out on the floor. Terribly wild."



No. 36

No. 37

EXTRACT from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 11th Battalion of Light Infantry, 11th Army Corps, concerning massacres at Leffe and Dinant.

"In Loef, 19 Civilisten erschossen fehlende (flehende) Frauen beim Vorgehen nach der Maas.

"Eben noch 10 Mann erschossen. Da der König den Befehl ausgegeben hat das Land mit allen Mitteln zu verteidigen, ist uns der Befehl ergangen sämmtliche männliche Personen zu erschiessen.

"Nachmittags 2 Uhr rasendes Gewehr-und Kanonen und schreckliches schweres Artillerie Feuer an der Maas.

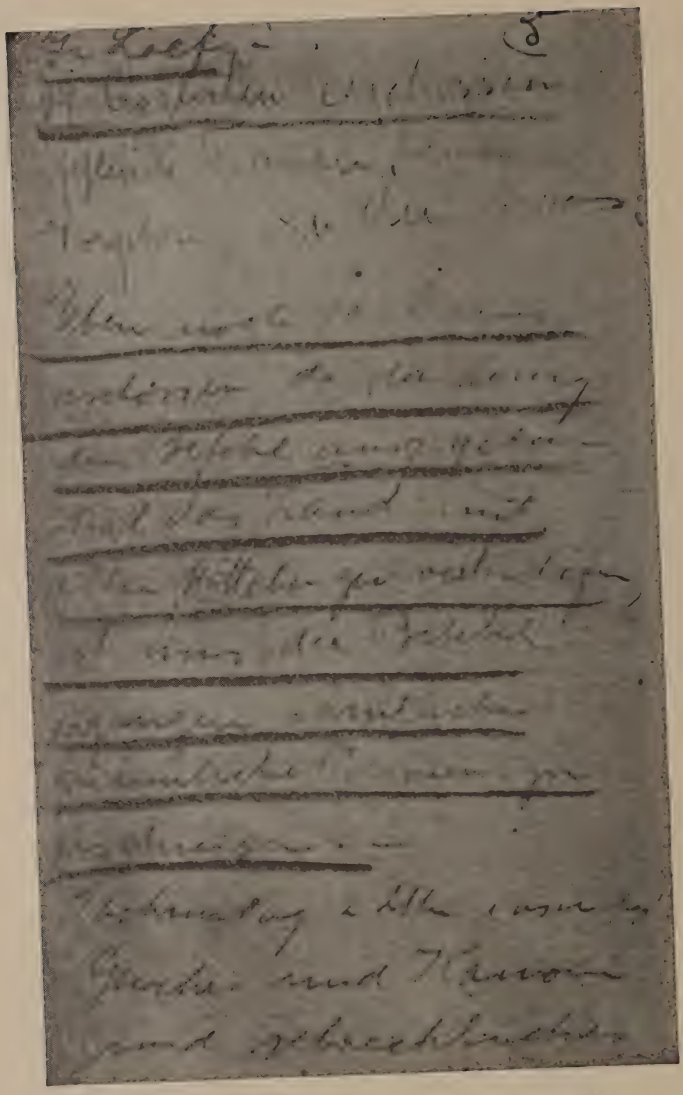
"In Dinand waren nahezu 100 Mann und noch darüber die auf Haufen gestellt und erschossen worden. Ein schrecklicher Sonntag."

"At Leffe, nineteen civilians shot. Women begging for mercy as we marched towards the Meuse.

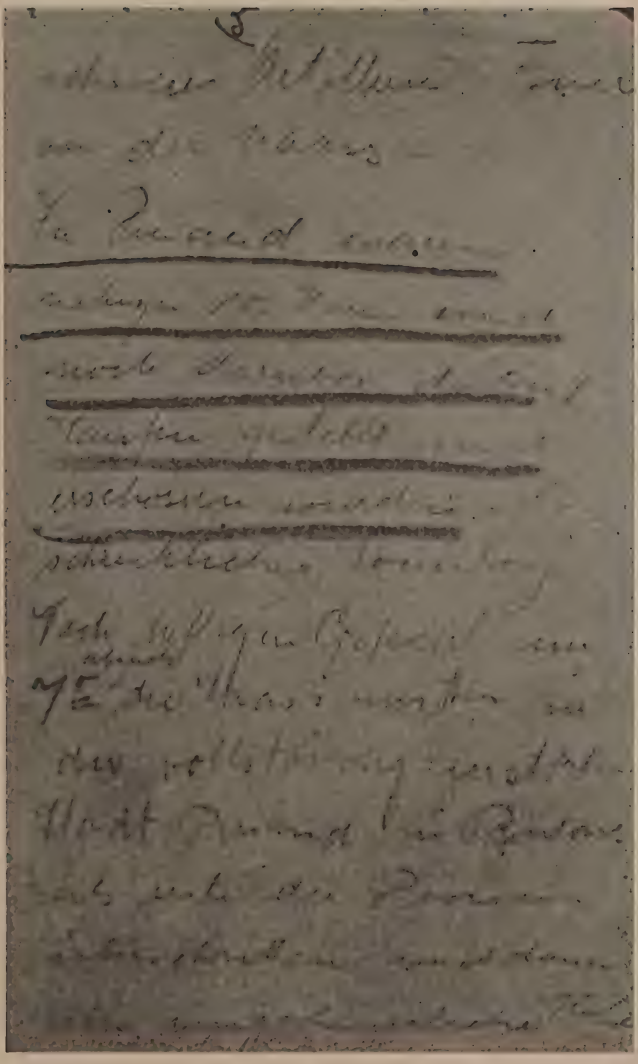
"Ten more men have been shot. The King having directed the people to defend the country by all possible means, we have received orders to shoot the entire male population.

"At 2 P.M. furious rifle and cannon fire and awful heavy artillery fire on the Meuse.

"At Dinant about 100 men or more were huddled together and shot. A horrible Sunday."



No. 37



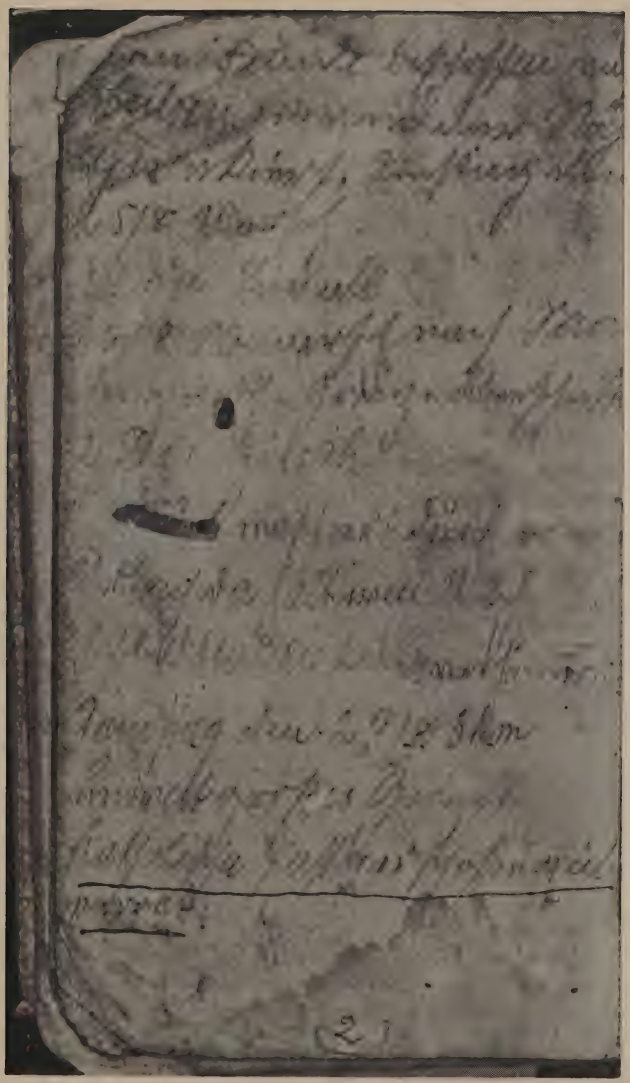
No. 37

No. 38

EXTRACT from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 19th Division, Saxon Ersatz, concerning the murder of a Catholic priest.

"Samstag den 29. 8. 3 Km. unweit, grosses Gefecht. Katholischer Pastor erschossen weil verrat."

"Saturday, Aug. 29, 3 kilometres off a big fight. A Catholic priest shot for treachery."



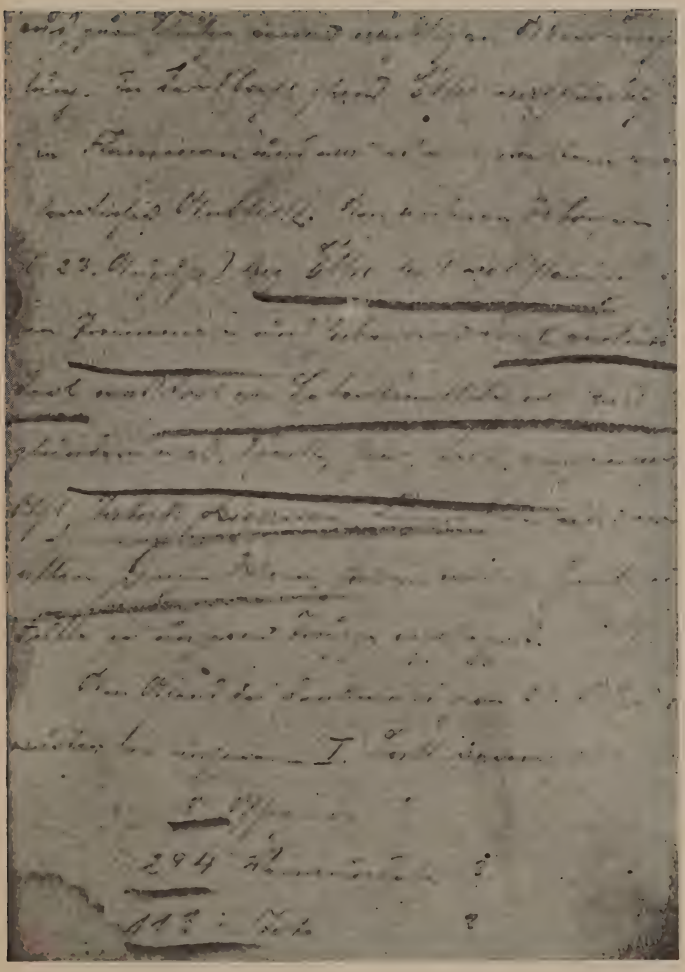
No. 38

No. 39

EXTRACT from the note-book of an anonymous soldier of the 50th Regiment of Infantry, 5th Army Corps, concerning the burning and sacking of Ethe (Belgium).

"In der Nacht stand Ethe vollständig in Flammen und war es von weitem ein herrlicher Anblick. Am anderen Morgen (23 August) lag Ethe fast vollständig in Trümmern, und haben wir dort geplündert was dort an Lebensmitteln noch zu plündern war. Speck, Eier, Brot, eingemachtes Obst, Tabak, Cigarren, Cigaretten, und vor allen Dingen Wein haben wir in Hülle und Fülle zu unserer Truppe geschleppt."

"In the night Ethe was entirely in flames, and it was a magnificent sight from a distance. The next day, August 23, Ethe was almost entirely in ruins, and we looted everything that was left in the way of provisions. We carried off quantities of bacon, eggs, bread, jam, tobacco, cigars, cigarettes, and above all wine, for our regiment."



No. 39

No. 40

EXTRACT from the note-book of an anonymous hospital orderly, concerning an act of cruelty to prisoners.

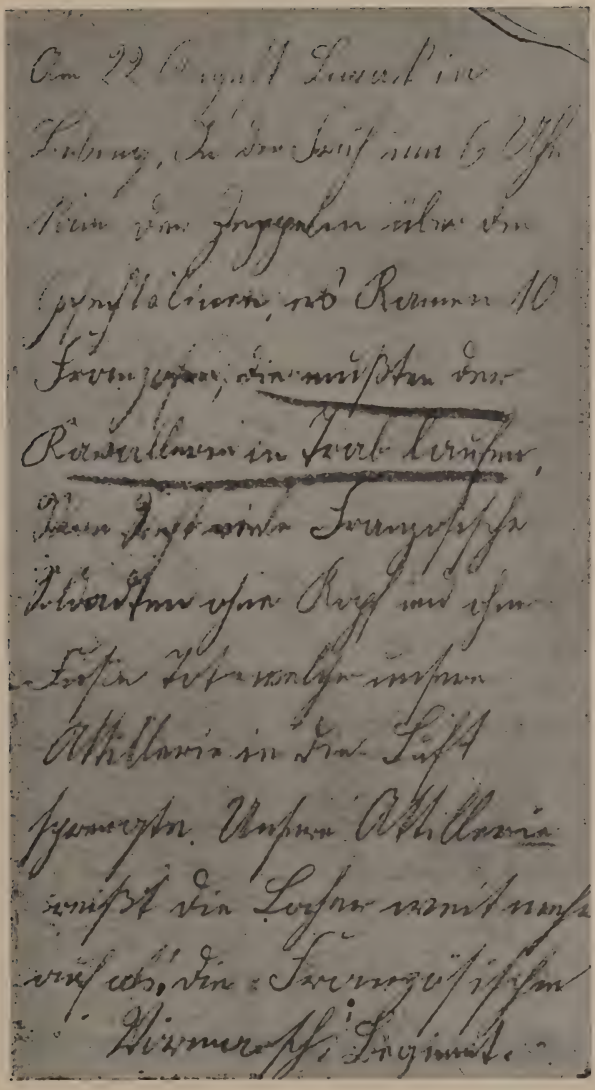
"Am 22. August . . . es kamen 10 Franzosen die mussten der Kavallerie im Trab laufen."

"On August 22 . . . 10 Frenchmen came, and they were forced to run with the cavalry at a trot."

No. 41

EXTRACT from the note-book of a soldier of the 32d Infantry Regiment, 4th Reserve Corps, describing the first two advances of his regiment in Belgium.

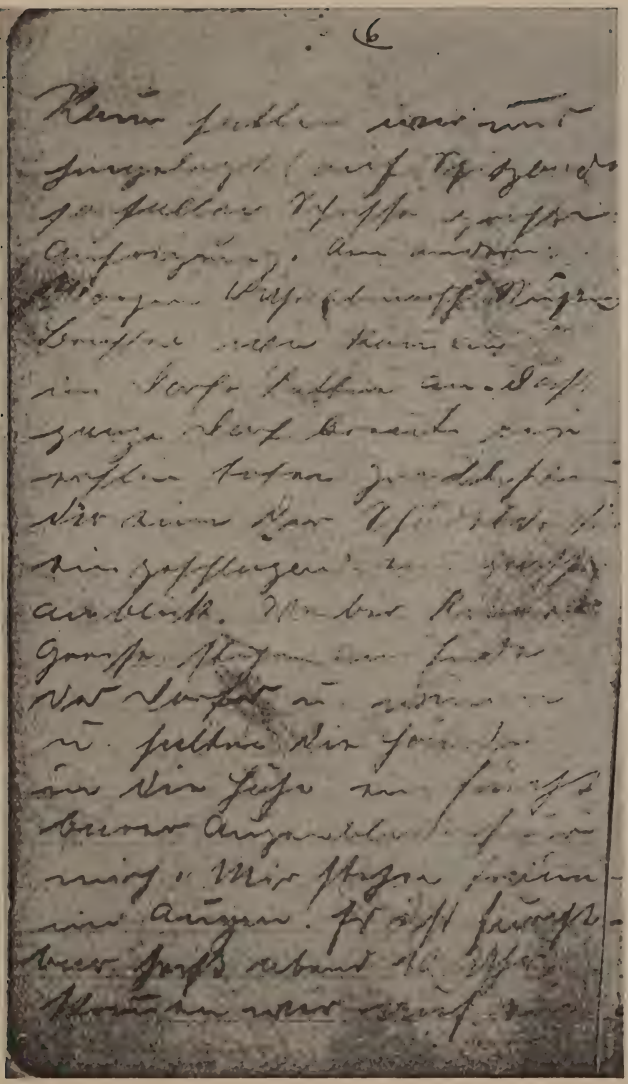
"Montag [17. August]. Rüstung. Belg. Grenze um 12 Uhr überschritten. Es ist ein Hurra ausgebracht worden. Kaum hatten wir die Grenze überschritten, sind wir im Krieg. Tote Pferde, brennende Dörfer, rechts u. links von Chausse kleine Hügel mit Kreuzen: hier liegen Deutsche und Französische Kameraden.



No. 40

Wir beziehen in Leylen Massenquartier. Meine (?) Bauer schlachten ein Schwein. Rotwein. Kaum hatten wir uns hingelegt (auf Spitzboden), so fallen Schüsse. Grosse Aufregung. Am andern Morgen 4 Uhr Abmarsch Richt. Brüssel. Wir kommen in Dorfe Betten an. Das ganze Dorf brennt. Die ersten toten Zivillisten, der eine die Schädeldecke eingeschlagen, ein grasser Anblick. Weiber, Kinder, Greise stehen am Ende des Dorfes u. weinen u. halten die Hände in die Höhe, ein furchtbarer Augenblick für mich. Mir stehen Träne(n) in Augen."

"Monday [August 17]. Call to arms. Cross the Belgian frontier at noon. We shout hurrah! No sooner have we crossed the frontier than we find ourselves in the thick of war. Dead horses, burning villages, right and left of the highway little mounds with crosses; German and French lying together. Large bodies of us billeted at Leylen. My peasants kill a pig. Red wine. Scarcely had we lain down (in a loft) when shots were fired. Great excitement. We march at 4 A.M. next morning, towards Brussels. We arrive at the village of Betten. The whole village is in flames. There [we saw] the first dead civilians, one with the top of his skull battered in, a horrible sight. Women, children, and old men stand at the end of the village weeping and holding up their hands, a dreadful moment for me. My eyes fill with tears."



No. 41

No. 42

EXTRACTS from the note-book of another soldier of the 32d Infantry, 4th Reserve Corps, concerning murders and looting at Tongres, Creil, etc.

"19.8.14. In Tongers . . . eine Menge Häuser geplündert von unsrer berittenen Truppe.

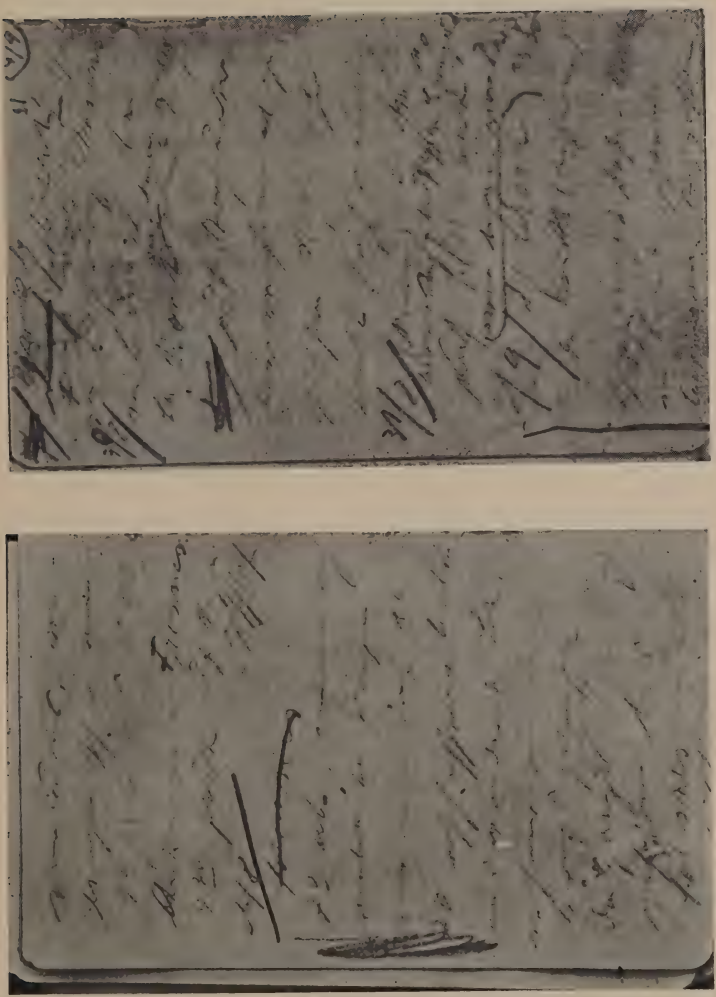
"26.8. Immer noch verbrannte Dörfer. Vor einem Dorf ca. 20 erschossenen Civilisten.

"1.9. Creil. Die Brücke (eiserne) gesprengt; dafür Strassen in Brand gesteckt. Civilisten erschossen."

"19.8.14. Tongres . . . a large number of houses looted by our cavalry.

"26.8. A lot more villages burnt. In front of one of them there were the bodies of about twenty civilians who had been shot.

"1.9. Through Creil. The iron bridge had been blown up; for this, whole streets were burned and civilians shot."



No. 42

No. 43

EXTRACT from the note-book of Baum, a soldier of the 182d Regiment of Infantry, concerning looting at Novion, Rethel, etc.

"Sonnabend d. 8.8.14. 12 Uhr 15. Abmarsch, ununterbrochen marschirt bis früh 7 Uhr anschliessend eingreifend in das Gefecht bei Novion. Dauert bis nachm. 2 Uhr. Dorf gestürmt und geplündert.

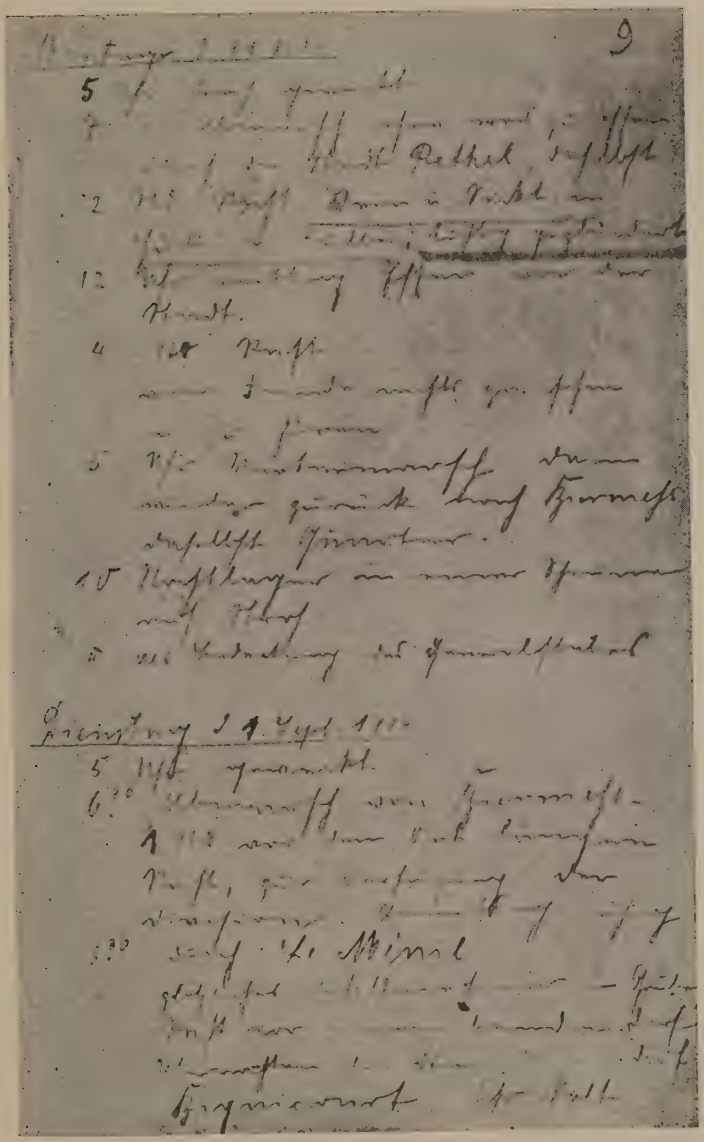
"Montag. d. 31.8.14. 7 Uhr. Abmarsch ohne etwas zu essen durch die Stadt Rethel, daselbst 2 Std. Rast. Wein und Sekt in Hülle und Fülle, tüchtig geplündert.

"Freitag, 4.9.14. 12 Uhr . . . gekocht und gebrätelt, Wein und Sekt in Hülle und Fülle."

"Saturday, 8.8.14. Started at 12.15 P.M. Marched without a halt till 7 the next morning to take part in the fighting at Novion. It lasted till 2 P.M. Village stormed and looted.

"Monday, 31.8.14. At 7 marched with nothing to eat. We passed through the town of Rethel, where we halted for two hours. Wine and champagne in abundance; we looted with a will.

"Friday, 4.9.14. Noon. We cooked, boiling and roasting; wine and champagne in abundance."



No. 43

No. 44

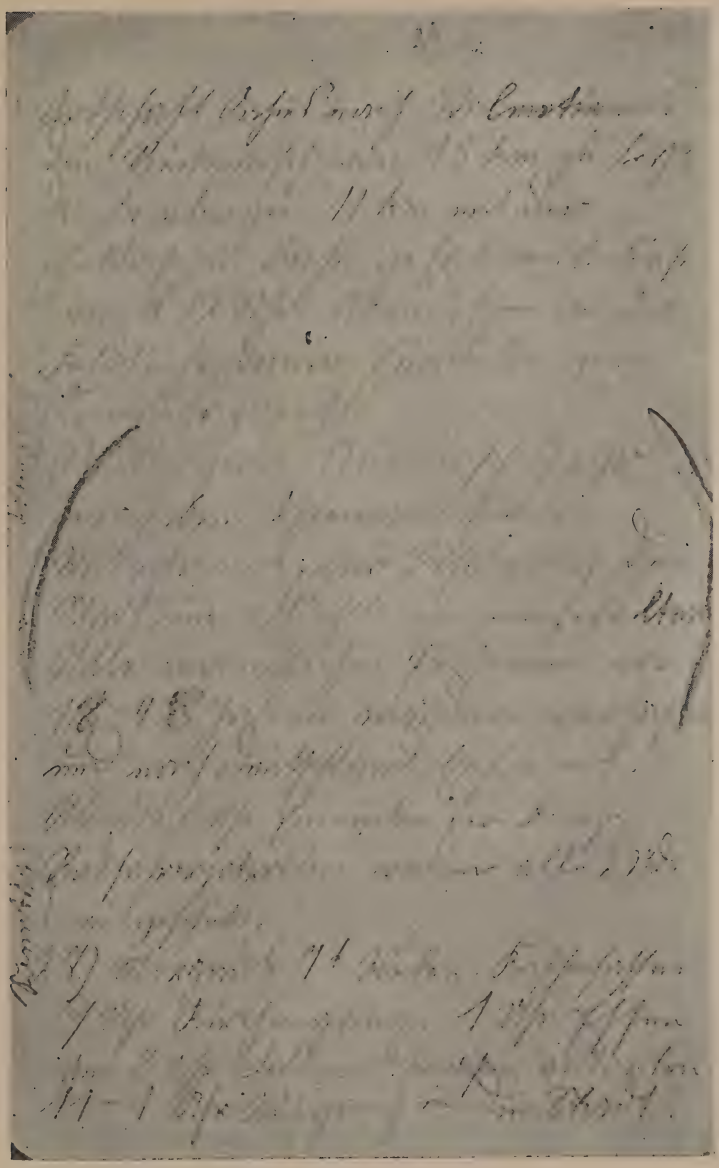
EXTRACT from the note-book of Heinrich Bissinger, a soldier in the 1st Regiment of Bavarian Pioneers, 1st Battalion, 2d Company, concerning crimes of the German troops at Orchies and Valenciennes.

"25 August. Um 10 Uhr Abmarsch nach Orchies, angekommen um 4 Uhr, Durchsuchen der Häuser. Sämtliche Civil personen werden verhaftet. Eine Frau wurde erschossen, weil sie auf 'Halt' Rufen nicht hielt sondern ausreissen wollte. Hierauf Verbrennen der ganzen Ortschaft. Um 7^{h} [1] Abmarsch von der brennenden Ortschaft Orchies nach Valentiennes. . . .

"26 August. Morgends Abmarsch 9 Uhr nach dem Osteingang von Valentiennes, zur Besetzung der Stadt um Flüchtlinge einzuhalten. Alle männlichen Personen von 18–48 werden verhaftet und nach Deutschland befordert."

"25 August. About 10 marched to Orchies, arrived there about 4. Houses searched. All civilians taken prisoners. A woman was shot, because she did not

[1] Photographic reproductions of this note-book have already been published, when certain persons ventured to question its authenticity on the ground that the use of the letter *h* (Um 7h. Abmarsch, etc.) was not German. To reduce this observation to its true value it is only necessary to consult Sachs-Villate's dictionary under the letter H, where we read: "h. used to denote time = Latin *hora*, as, for instance, 9 h. 11′ = 11 minutes past 9."



No. 44

halt at the word of command, but tried to run away. Hereupon the whole place was set on fire. At 7 o'clock we left Orchies in flames and marched towards Valenciennes.

"26 August. Marched off at 9 A.M. towards the eastern entrance of Valenciennes to occupy the town and keep back fugitives. All the male inhabitants from 18 to 48 were arrested and sent to Germany."

No. 45

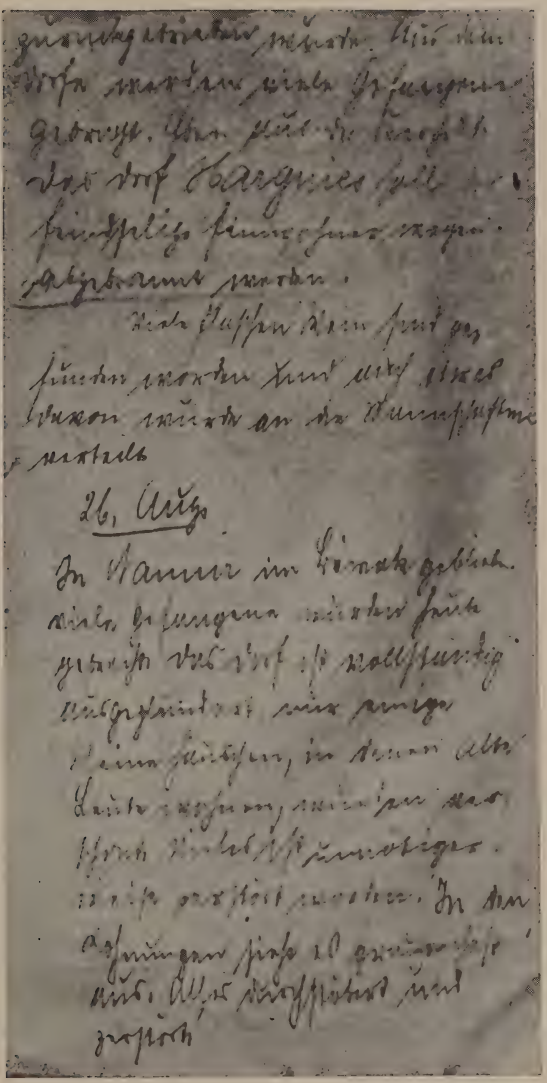
EXTRACT from the note-book of Horst Braener, a soldier of the 134th Regiment of Infantry, 10th Saxons, 19th Army Corps, concerning the looting and burning of several villages round Namur.

"[25 Aug.] Das Dorf Hargnies soll der feindselige Einwohner wegen abgebrannt werden.

"Viele Flaschen Wein sind gefunden worden und auch etwas davon wurde an die Mannschaften verteilt.

"26 Aug. In Namur in Biewak geblieben. Viele Gefangene wurden heute gebracht. Das Dorf ist vollständig ausgeplündert, nur einige kleine Häuschen, in denen alte Leute wohnen, wurden verschont. Vieles ist unnötigerweise zerstört worden. In den Wohnungen sieht es grauenhaft aus. Alles durchstöbert und zerstört."

"[Aug. 25.] The village of Hargnies is to be burnt on account of the hostile inhabitants.



No. 45

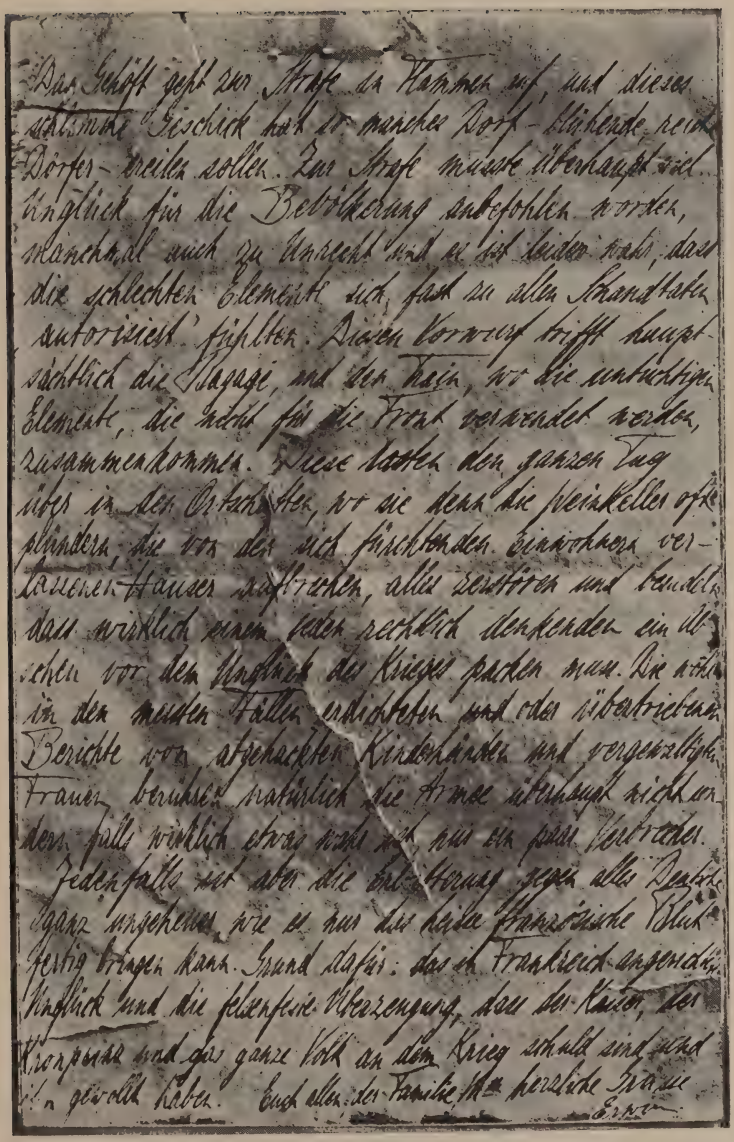
"A great many bottles of wine were found, and some of these were distributed among the men.

"Aug. 26. Stayed to bivouac at Namur. Many prisoners brought in today. The village has been thoroughly plundered, only a few small hovels in which some old people live were spared. A great deal was wantonly destroyed. The houses are a terrible sight. Everything ransacked and smashed."

No. 46

EXTRACT from a letter written by Erwin Brasch, of the 1st Regiment of Light Horse, a prisoner, concerning the crimes he witnessed.

"Das Gehöft geht zur Strafe in Flammen auf, und dieses schlimme Geschick hat so manches Dorf—blühende, reiche Dörfer—ereilen sollen. Zur Strafe musste überhaupt viel Unglück für die Bevölkerung anbefohlen werden, manchmal auch zu Unrecht und es ist leider wahr, dass die schlechten Elemente sich fast zu allen Schandtaten autorisiert fühlten. Diesen[read Dieser] Vorwurf trifft hauptsächtlich die Bagage, und den Train, wo die untüchtigen Elemente, die nicht für die Front verwendet werden, zusammenkommen. Diese rasten den ganzen Tag über in den Ortschaften, wo sie denn die Weinkeller oft plündern, die von den sich fürchtenden Einwohnern verlassenen Häuser aufbrechen, alles zerstören und besudeln dass wirklich



Das Schloß geht zur Straße da Kammen auf, und dieses schlimme Geschick hat so manches Dorf - blühende reiche Dörfer - theilen sollen. Zur Strafe mußte überhaupt viel Unglück für die Bevölkerung anbefohlen worden, manchmal auch zu Unrecht und es ist leider wahr, daß die schlechten Elemente sich fast zu allen Schandthaten autorisiert fühlten. Diesen Vorwurf trifft hauptsächlich die Wagage, und den Rest, wo die unsittlichen Elemente, die Hefe für die Front verwendet werden, zusammenkommen. Diese hatten den ganzen Tag über in den Ortschaften, wo sie dann die Weinkeller offen plünderten, die von den sich flüchtenden Einwohnern verlassenen Häuser aufbrechen, alles durchsuchen und handeln, dann wirklich einem guten rechtlich denkenden ein Abscheu vor dem Unglück des Krieges packen muß. Die übertriebenen Berichte von abgehackten Kinderhänden und vergewaltigten Frauen berühren natürlich die Armee überhaupt nicht, in dem Falle wirklich etwas wahr war, was ein paar Verbrechen.

Jedenfalls hat aber die Entrüstung gegen alles Deutsche ganz ungeheuer große es hat die halbe französische Bildung ergriffen kann. Grund dafür: daß ich Frankreich angegriffen, Unglück und die felsenfeste Überzeugung, daß der Kaiser, der Kronprinz und das ganze Volk an dem Krieg schuld sind und ihn gewollt haben. Euch allen, der Familie Ihr herzliche Grüße

Ernst

No. 46

einem jeden rechtlich denkenden ein Abscheu vor dem Unglück des Krieges packen muss. Die wohl in den meisten Fällen erdichteten oder übertriebenen Berichte von abgehackten Kinderhänden und vergewaltigten Frauen berühren natürlich die Armee überhaupt nicht, sondern falls wirklich etwas wahr ist, nur ein paar Verbrecher."

"As a punishment the farm was burnt, and this sad fate must have overtaken many rich and flourishing villages. In a general way it was necessary to order many punishments that were disastrous for the population, sometimes indeed unjustly, and it is, unhappily, true that the evil elements felt authorized to commit nearly every kind of misdeed. This reproach applies more particularly to the men in charge of the baggage and ammunition trains, who are for the most part worthless stuff, not fit for the front. These men spend whole days of idleness in places, where they often loot the cellars, break into the houses which the terrified inhabitants have abandoned, destroy and befoul everything, so that every right-thinking person must be filled with horror at the misery of war. The stories, invented or exaggerated in most cases, of children whose hands have been cut off and outraged women, are not, of course, a general indictment of our army; when there is some truth in them, they apply only to a few criminals."

No. 47

EXTRACTS from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Burkhardt, of the 1st Company of the 100th Regiment Grenadiers, Reserve.

"Bei dem grossen Transport waren auch 2 Pfaffen in weissen Mantel mit den Händen gebunden. Sie hatten auch auf uns geschossen. Ich werde sie nicht vergessen, wie sie unter den Last der deutschen Tornister schwitzten.

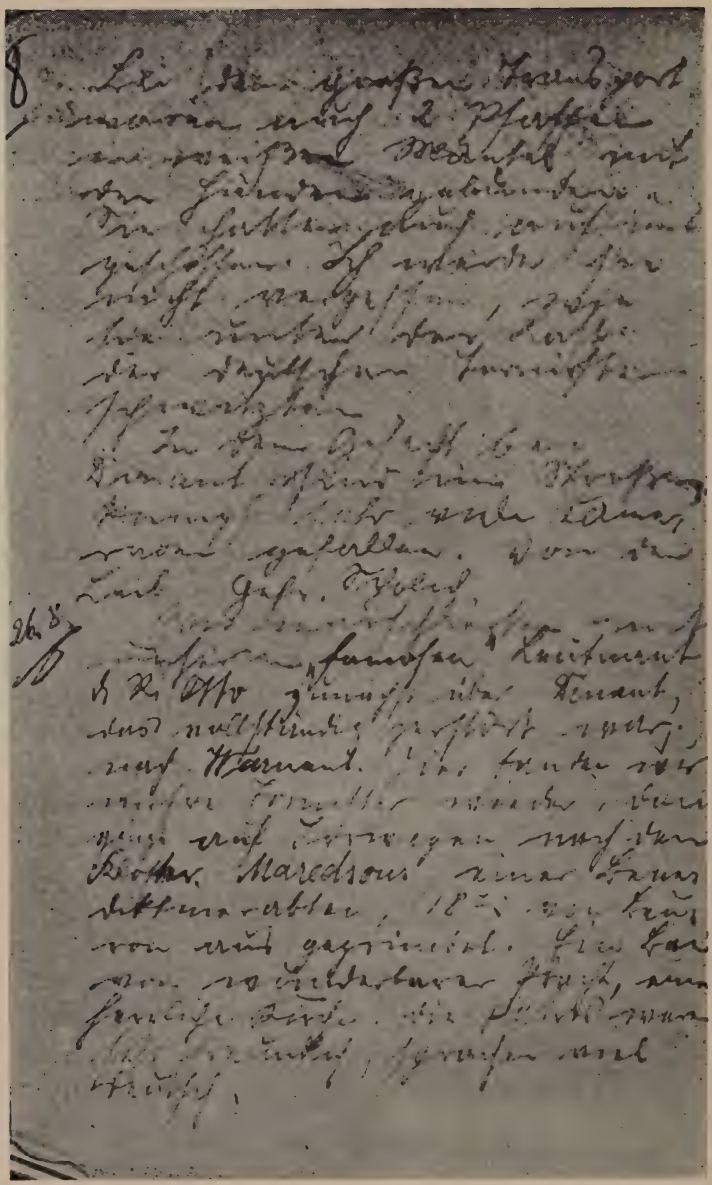
"Bei einem Traindepot, das von einem Zahlmeister und 2 Mann bewacht wird, fassen wir Konserven. Lt. Otto lässt noch einige Leute zur Bedeckung zurück. Wir unterziehen den Weinkeller einer Revision und finden allerlei gute Sachen. Die wunderbaren Räume des Schlosses sehen grauenhaft aus. Man hat nach Gold und Silber gesucht, und alles durcheinander geworfen. Der Weitermarsch ist nach der reichlich genossenen Alkoholizis sehr sauer. Ich habe zudem eine Steinbulle Chatreuse [*sic*] im Tornister."

August 25.

"In the great convoy there were also two priests, clad in white cloaks, their hands tied. They had fired on our troops. I shall never forget how they perspired under the weight of the German knapsacks.

Near Rumigny-Ardennes.

"From a train-dépôt, guarded by a paymaster and two men, we got some tinned food. Lieut. Otto left a



few men behind to cover us. We revisited the cellars and found all sorts of good things. The splendid rooms of the château are a terrible sight. Everything turned upside down in the hunt for gold and silver. It is very hard to have to march again after drinking one's fill. I brought away a stone bottle of Chartreuse too in my knapsack."

No. 48

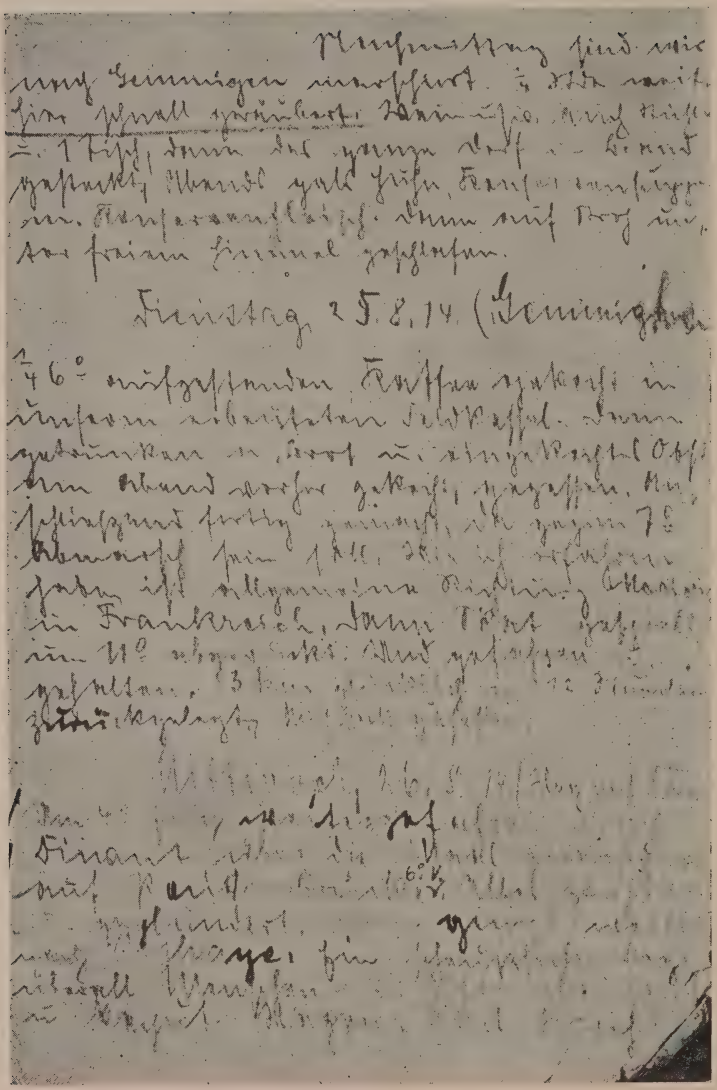
EXTRACTS from the note-book of Private Buttner of the 100th Grenadiers, 12th Army Corps.

"Montag. 24.8.14. Nachmittag sind wir nach Gemmingen marschirt ¼ Stde weit. Schnell geräubert. . . .

"Mittwoch, 26.8.14. (Weg nach Dinant.) Um 4° früh weitergefahren nach Dinant, über die Maas marschirt auf Pontonbrücke (6° v). Alles zerstört und geplündert."

"Monday, 24. 8. 14. In the afternoon we advanced on Gemmingen, quarter of an hour from here. There we looted in all haste.

"Wednesday, 26. 8. 14. (On the road towards Dinant.) Went on at 4 A.M. to Dinant; crossed the Meuse on a pontoon-bridge (at six o'clock). Everything was destroyed and looted."



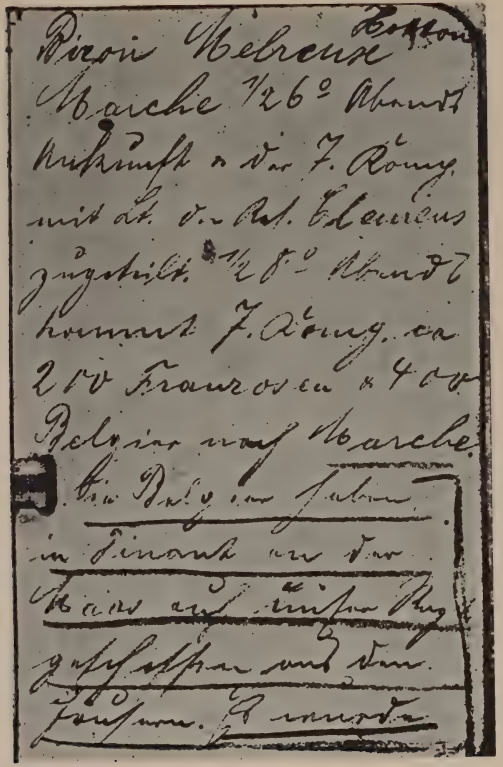
No. 48

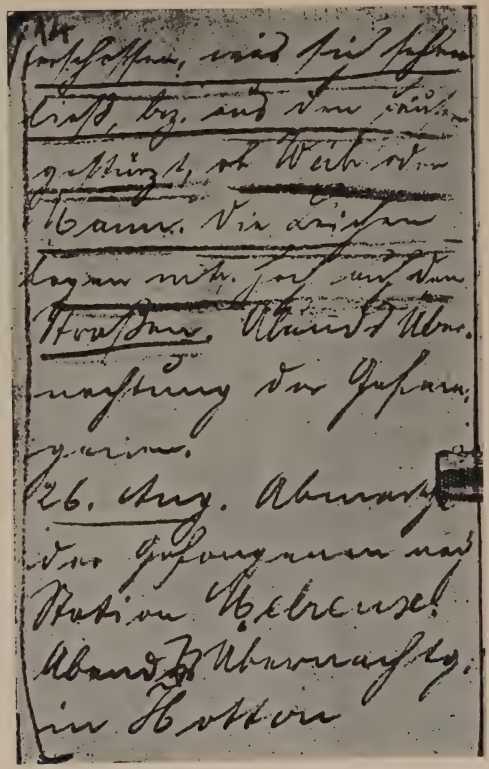
No. 49

EXTRACT from the note-book of Erich Dressler, of the 3d Company of the 100th Regiment of Grenadiers (1st Saxon Corps).

25 Aug. "Die Belgier haben in Dinant an der Maas auf unser Regt geschossen aus den Häusern. Es wurde erschossen was sich sehen liess bz. aus den Häusern gestürzt, ob Weib oder Mann. Die Leichen lagen mtr. hoch auf den Strassen. Abends Uebernachtung der Gefangenen."

August 25. "The Belgians at Dinant on the Meuse fired on our regiment from the houses. All those who showed themselves or who were thrown out of the houses were shot, whether men or women. Corpses were lying in the streets, piled up a yard high. In the evening guarding prisoners for the night."



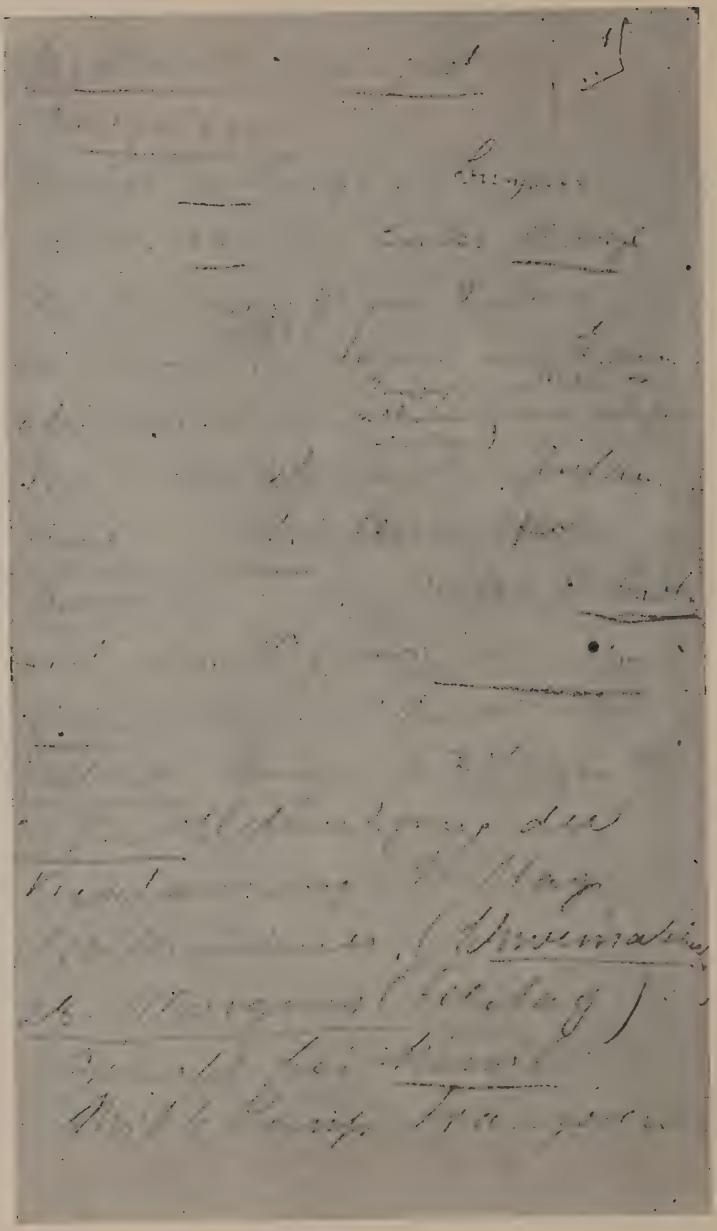


No. 50

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Fritz Ehrhardt, of the 170*th Regiment of Infantry, concerning the burning of Sainte-Barbe (Vosges).*

"Mittwoch, 26. August. Von 9 Uhr ab starkes Infanterie und Artillerie Gefecht. In Brandstecken des Dorfes Ste.-Barbe weil abends zuvor daraus geschossen wurde. Schauerlicher Anblick."

"Wednesday, August 26. From 9 o'clock onwards, severe fighting, artillery and infantry. The village of Sainte-Barbe has been set on fire because, on the previous evening, there had been some shooting from this quarter. A horrible sight."



No. 50

No. 51

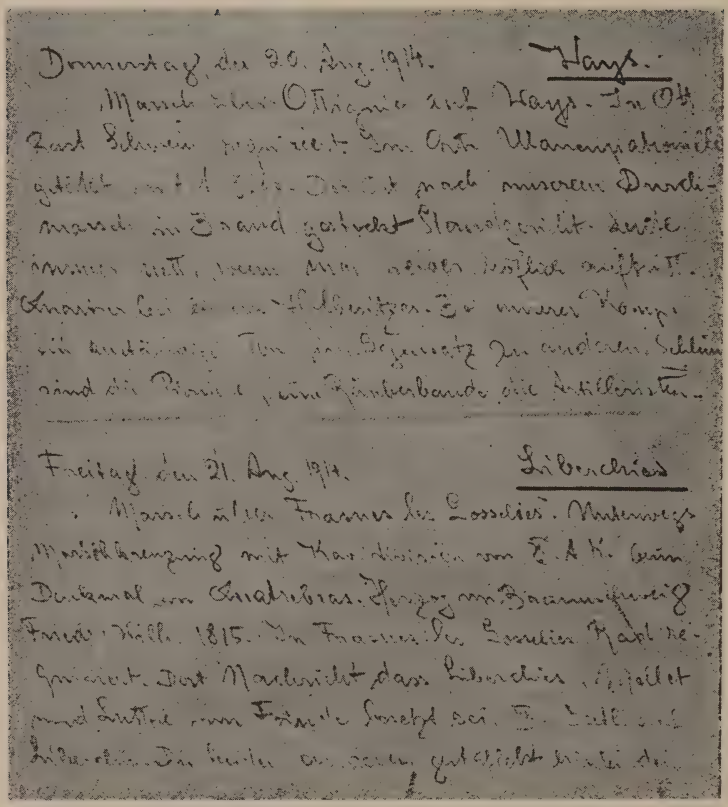
EXTRACT from the note-book of Lieutenant Elster, of the 77th Regiment of Infantry, Reserve, concerning the burning of Ottignie (Belgium), in which he stigmatizes certain German corps.

DONNERSTAG, *den* 20 *Aug.* 1914. VAYS.

"Marsch über Ottignie auf Vays. In Ott. Rast. Schwein requiriert. Im Orte Ulanenpatrouille getötet mit 1. Offz. Der Ort nach unserem Durchmarsch in Brand gesteckt. Standgericht. Leute immer nett wenn man selber höflich auftritt. Quartier bei einem Hofbesitzer. Bei unserer Komp. ein anständiger Ton im Gegensatz zu anderen. Schlimm sind die Pioniere, eine Räuberbande die Artilleristen."

Thursday, Aug. 20, 1914. VAYS.

"We march upon Vays through Ottignie. Halt at Ottignie. Requisition a pig. In this place a patrol of Uhlans with an officer killed. Place burnt after we had gone through. Court martial. The people always civil if one behaves properly to them. Billet at a farm. In our company the tone is good, a contrast to some others. The engineers are bad enough, the Artillery a band of robbers."



Donnerstag, den 20. Aug. 1914. Hays.

Marsch über Ottignies und Hays. In Ott Rast. Schwein requiriert. Im Orte Wagenpanik. Alles gestiebt und 1 Tote. Der Ort nach unserem Durchmarsch in Brand gesteckt. Standgericht. Leute immer mit, denen man nichts anhaben kann. Ansammlung bei Hays. Hier unser Korps die Nachhut. Um ins Gefecht zu kommen, Schluß sind die Paris und Hamburger die Artilleristen.

Freitag, den 21. Aug. 1914. Libercies

Marsch über Franois les Lossies. Unterwegs Musikkranzung mit Kavallerie von E. A. K. beim Denkmal von Arabrias. Herzog von Braunschweig Freiw. Kolb. 1815. In Francois les Lossies Rast requiriert. Dort Marketender. Schnaps, Apfelwein und Leute vom Feinde scheint sei. Es heißt auch Libercies. Die Leute an einem Galgen hängt die

No. 51

No. 52

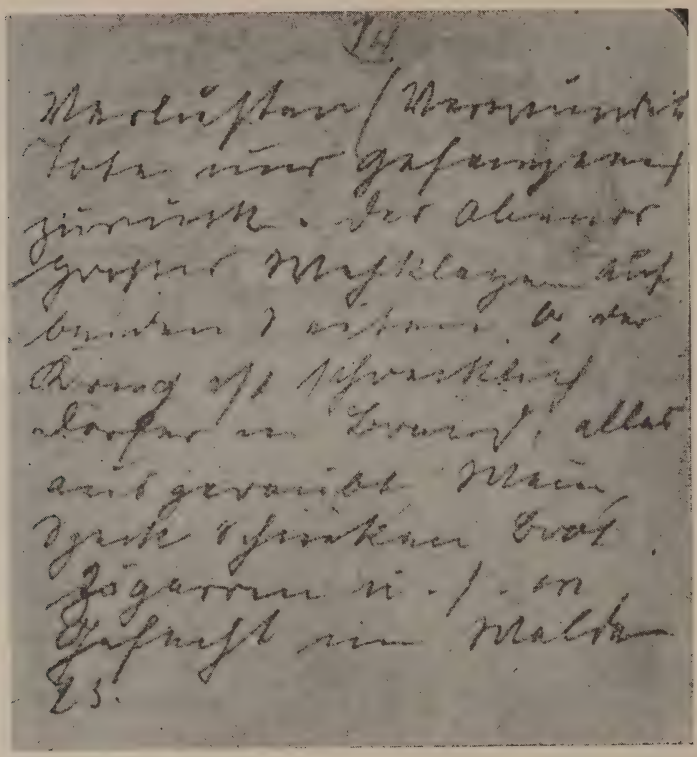
EXTRACT from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Fritz Gehrmann, of the 88th Regiment of Infantry, 18th Army Corps.

"22. Aug. Des Abends grosses Wehklagen auf beiden Seiten. O der Krieg ist schrecklich. Dörfer in Brand, alles ausgeraubt, Wein, Speck, Schinken, Brot, Zigarren u. s. w. Gefecht im Walde.

"24. Aug. Der Aufbruch beginnt immer bei Tagesanbruch, meistens nach 1–4 Std. Ruhezeit unter dem freien Himmel. Mittags Einquartierung im Dorf. Alles lebendig Essbare wird gemordet. Die Bewohner sind geflüchtet. Alles wird geplündert. Es sieht räuberhaft aus.

"25. Aug. Vom 24 auf 25 Wachthaben in der Kirche zu N. 5 franz. Gefangene, darunter 2 Offiz. Das Regiment hatte nach langen, schweren Tagen einen Ruhetag in Bürgerquartieren. Die Bewohner sind sämtlich geflüchtet. Von oben his unten wird alles ausgeräumt, nichts bleibt unversehrt. Ein wahres Räuberleben, Hühner, Enten, Gänse, Kaninchen werden verzehrt. Es sieht geradezu räuberhaft aus."

"Aug. 22. In the evening, loud cries of pain from both sides. Oh! war is horrible! Villages blazing,

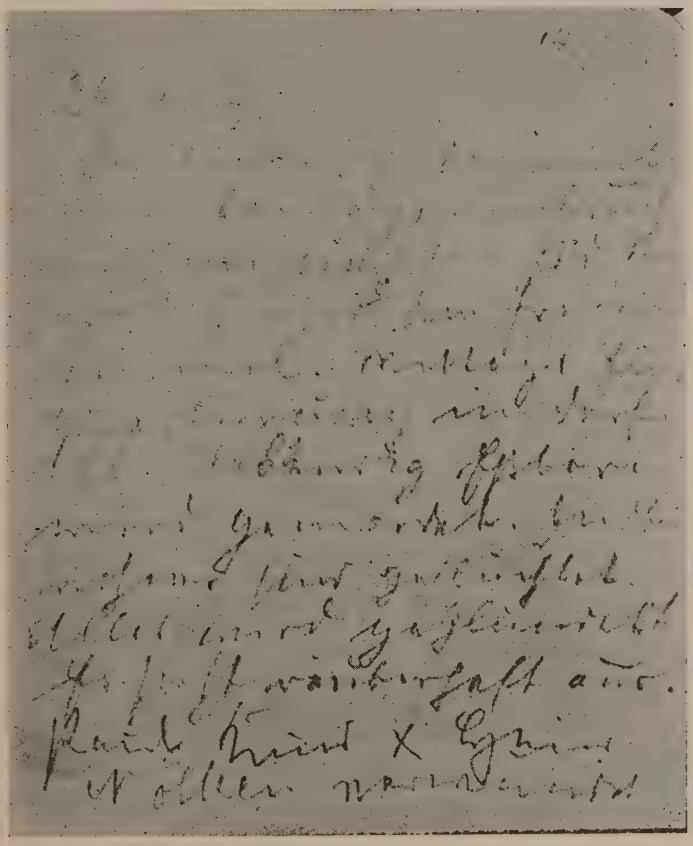


No. 52

everything plundered, wine, bacon, ham, bread, cigars, etc. Fighting in the forest.

"Aug. 24. We always march at break of day, generally after from one to four hours of rest in the open air. In the middle of the day we camp in a village.

Every living edible thing is slaughtered. The inhabi-

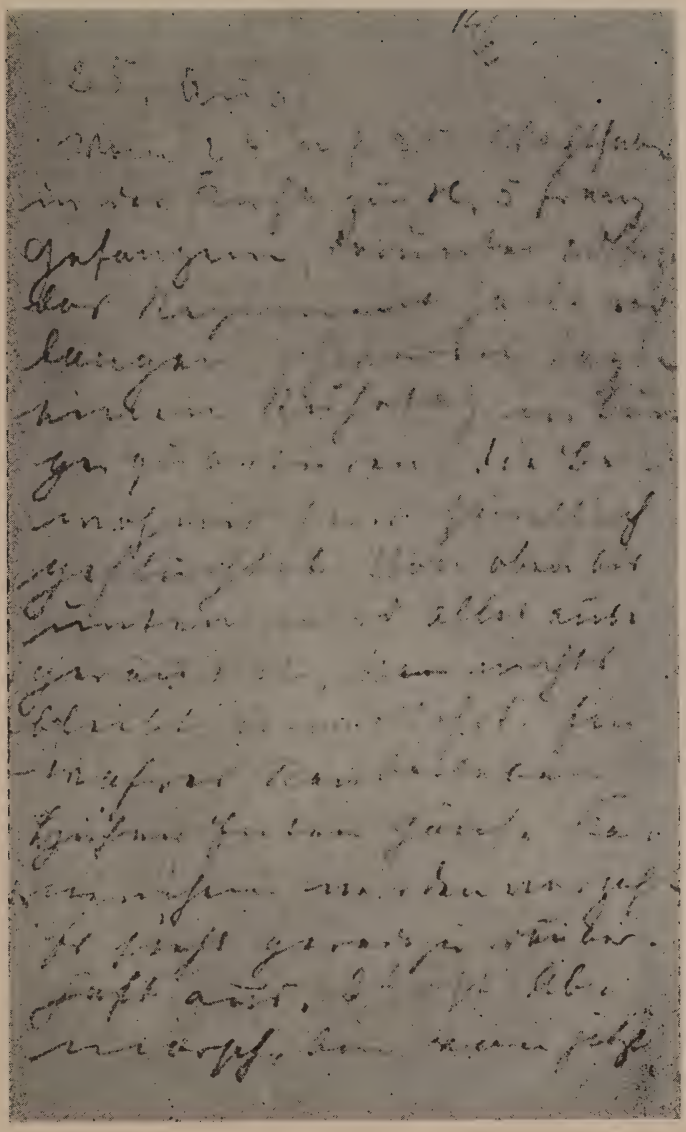


No. 52

tants have fled. Everything is pillaged. It looks like the work of robbers.

"Aug. 25. From the 24th to the 25th, mounted

guard in the church at N. Five French prisoners, among them two officers. The regiment got a day's rest in billets after many long, strenuous days. All the inhabitants have fled. From top to bottom, everything has been looted and nothing remains intact. A regular brigand's life, this. We devour chickens, ducks, geese and rabbits. It certainly looks like the work of robbers."



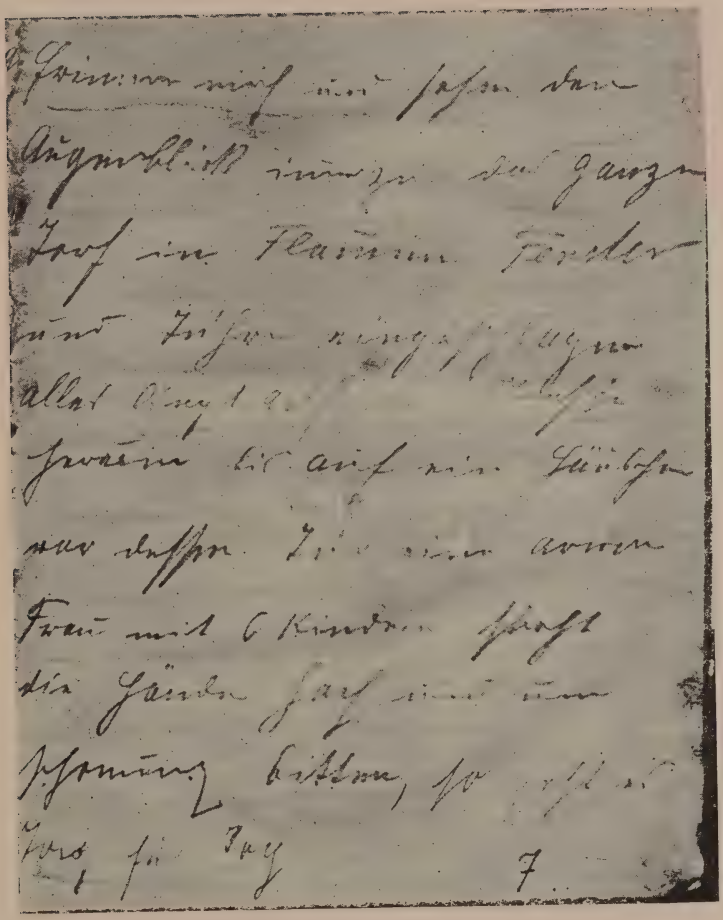
No. 52

No. 53

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Richard Gerhold, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, describing the ill-treatment of the Belgian population.

"Erinnere mich und sehe den Augenblick immer zu. Das ganze Dorf in Flammen. Fenster und Türen eingeschlagen. Alles leigt auf der Strasse herum bis auf ein Häuschen, vor dessen Tür eine arme Frau mit 6 Kindern steht, die Hände hoch uns um Schonung bittend, so geht es Tag für Tag."

"I remember and see the moment [of the entry into Belgium] always before me. The whole village was in flames, doors and windows shattered. Everything lying on the ground in the street, save one little house; before the door stood a poor woman with six children, holding up her hands to implore mercy. And day after day it is the same thing."



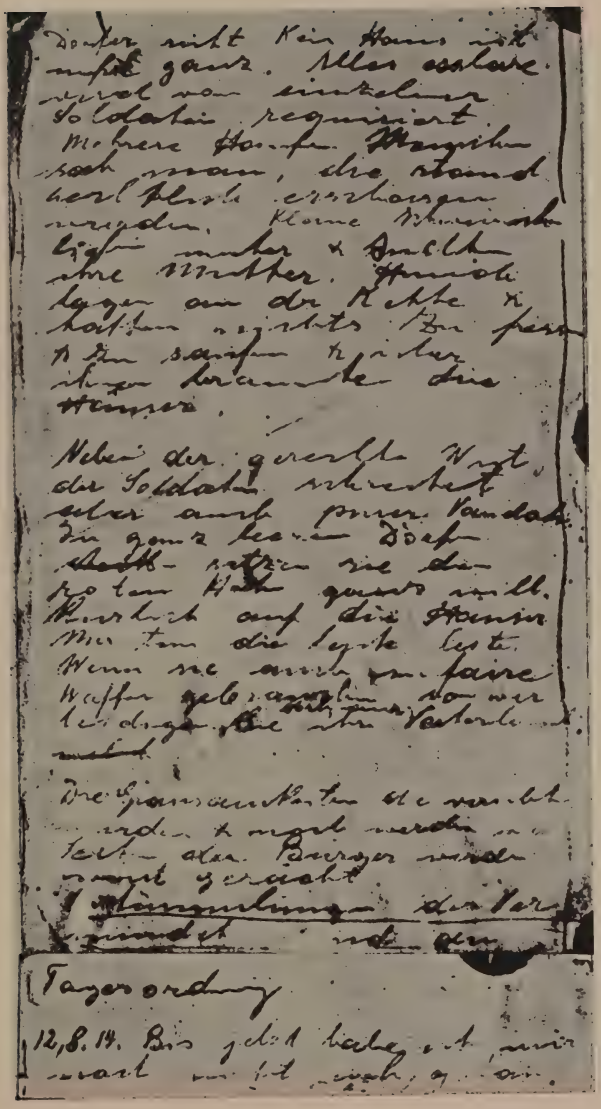
No. 53

No. 54

EXTRACT from a note-book probably written (according to Private Paul Glöde, 76th Infantry Regiment, a prisoner at Casablanca, Morocco) by Lance-Corporal Dannehl, 9th Battalion of Engineers, 9th Army Corps, describing the acts of the German troops in Belgium.

"12.8.14. Von der Wut der Soldaten kann man sich ein Bild machen, wenn man die zerstörten Dörfer sieht. Kein Haus ist mehr ganz. Alles essbare wird von einzelnen Soldaten requiriert. Mehrere Haufen Menschen sah man, die standrechtlich erschossen wurden. Kleine Schweinchen liefen umher und suchten ihre Mutter. Hunde lagen an der Kette und hatten nichts zu fressen und zu saufen und über ihnen brannten die Häuser.

"Neben der gerechten Wut der Soldaten schreitet aber auch purer Vandalismus. In ganz leeren Dörfer setzen sie den roten Hahn ganz willkürlich auf die Häuser. Mir tun die Leute leit. Wenn sie auch unfaire Waffen gebrauchen, so verteidigen sie doch nur ihr Vaterland. Die Grausamkeiten die verübt wurden



No. 54

und noch werden von seiten der Bürger werden wüst gerächt.

"Verstümmelungen der Verwundeten sind an Tagesordnung."

"When one sees the ravaged villages one can form some idea of the fury of our soldiers. There is not a house intact. Everything eatable is requisitioned by individual soldiers. Dead people were lying in heaps, shot after trial by martial law. Little pigs were running about looking for their mothers, dogs were left chained up with nothing to eat or drink, and the houses were burning above them.

"Together with the righteous anger of our troops, a spirit of pure vandalism exists. In villages which are already completely deserted they set fire to the houses just as the spirit moves them. My heart grieves for the inhabitants. It may be that they make use of treacherous weapons, but if so, after all, they are only defending their country. The atrocities which these townspeople have committed, or are still committing, are avenged in a cruel manner.

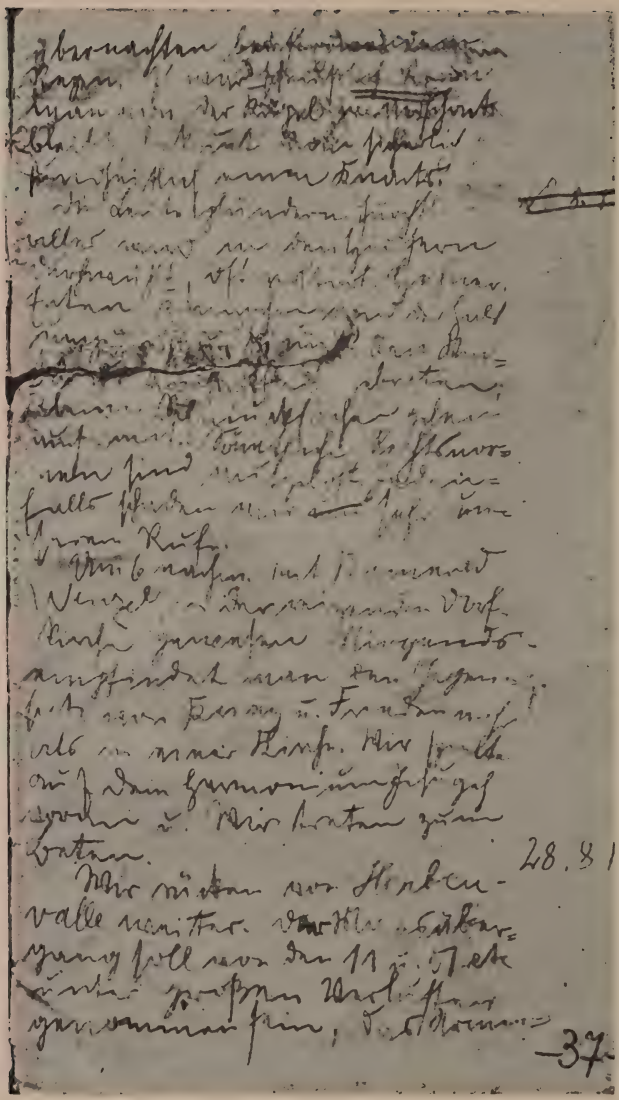
"Mutilation of the wounded is the order of the day."

No. 55

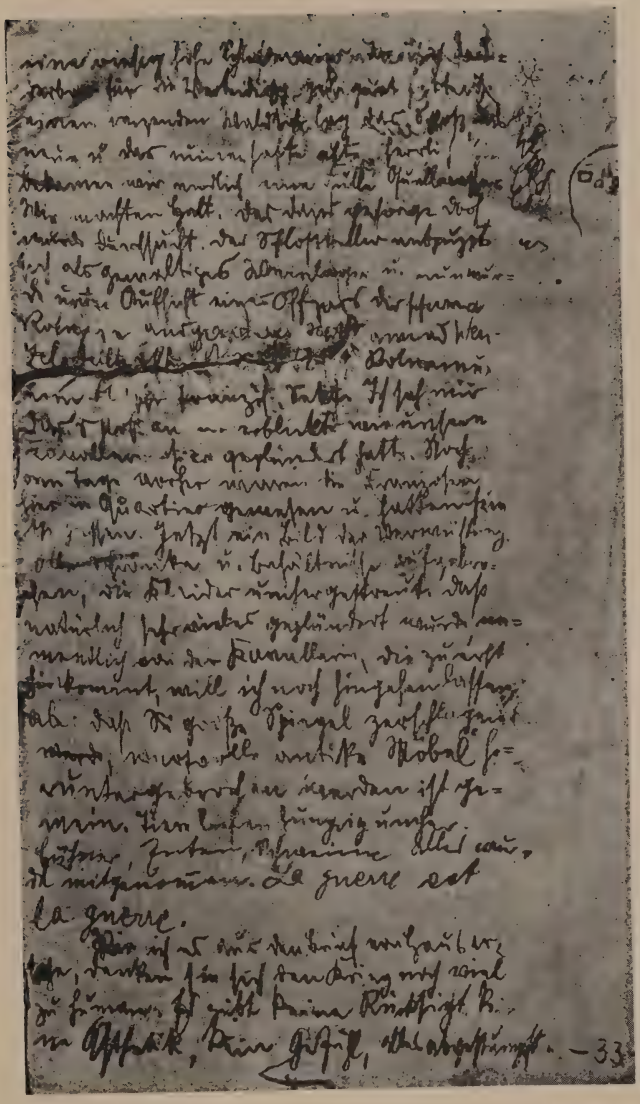
EXTRACT from the diary of Non-commissioned Officer, Erich Harlach, of the 38th Regiment of Fusiliers (Silesians) 6th Army Corps, describing and condemning the excesses committed by the Prussian troops.

Pages 25–6. . . . "Bier wurde Kastenweise angeschleppt, gegen eine Quittung, die sicherlich gar nichts wert ist. Man konnte leider gar bald sehen, wie die bête humaine in manchen Soldaten erwachte, man konnte gar bald die Beobachtung machen, ob die Kultur nur äusserlich anpoliert war, oder tief sass. Die Spitzbubenelemente stahlen, was sie bekommen konnten, Enten, Hühner, etc. Leider wurden sie oft durch falsch unterrichtete oder ähnlich veranlagte Unteroffiziere angefeuert. Wie Wilde durchsuchten sie die Häuser nach Waffen ohne Unterschied des Standes. La guerre est terrible namentlich für solche die an Aesthetik u. Ethik gewöhnt sind. . . .

Page 30. . . . "Als ich auf dieses Haus zuging, ertönte plötzlich ein grosses Geknatter wie von Schüs-



No. 55



No. 55

sen. Die Leute stoben aus dem Keller, ich glaubte wir seien in einem Hinterhalt geraten, der uns nun 1 wilden Strassenkampf bringen würde. Es stellte sich aber heraus, dass die Leute einen Stapel von Tausenden von Flaschen umgestossen hatten u. nun donnerten sie alle durcheina(n)der. Dann gingen die Leute u. holten massenhaft heraus. Ich liess mir eine u. eine Rotweinflasche geben. Fast die ganzen Leute waren angekneipt u. drangen in die Privathäuser u. plünderten. Es ist erlaubt Essbares u. solches, was man augenblicklich gebraucht, mitzunehmen; viele aber u. namentlich die mit der Bagage zogen, stahlen Uhren, Wertsachen, etc. Das ist scheusslich, namentlich gehen sie dabei derartig stuss vor, dass sie das, was sie nicht mitnehmen können, zu Boden werfen u. zerstampfen.

Page 33. . . . "Ich sah nur das Schloss an u. erblickte wie unsere Kavallerie hier geplündert hatte. Noch am Tage vorher waren die Franzosen hier in Quartier gewesen u. hatten hier gegessen. Jetzt ein Bild der Verwüstung. Alle Schränke u. Behältnisse aufgebrochen, die Kleider umhergestreut. Dass natürlich sehr vieles geplündert wurde, namentlich von der Kavallerie, die zuerst hinkommt, will ich noch hingehen lassen, aber dass grosse Spiegel zerschlagen, wertvolle antike Möbel heruntergebrochen werden ist gemein. Tiere liefen hungrig umher. Hühner, Enten, Schweine alles wurde mitgenommen. La guerre est la guerre. Wie ich es aus den Brief bon Haus ersehe, denken sie sich den

Krieg noch viel zu human. Es gibt keine Rücksicht, keine Aesthetik, kein Gefühl, alles abgestumpft.

Page 37. . . . "Die Leute plündern furchtbar, alles wird in den Häusern durchwülht, oft zerstört. Hühner, Enten, Kaninchen wird der Hals umgedrecht u. im stillen . . . [*illegible*] gebraten. Kleine Schmucksachen gehen auch mit. Sämtliche Rechtsnormen sind aufgelöst. Jedenfalls schaden wir sehr unserem Rufe."

Pages 25–26. . . . "Beer was brought along in cases in exchange for a receipt which is certainly worthless. Alas! How quickly one sees the *bête humaine* [*sic*] revealing itself in many a soldier; it was not long before we could tell whether our 'Kultur' was a mere surface varnish or something more deeply rooted. The scoundrelly element stole everything that they could lay their hands on: ducks, chickens, etc. Unfortunately, they were often encouraged to do so by non-commissioned officers, acting either in ignorance or because they were similarly inclined. They ransacked the houses like utter savages, looking for arms, without the least regard for social rank. La guerre est terrible [*sic*] especially for anyone who is accustomed to look at things from the æsthetic and moral points of view.

Page 30. . . . "As I was going towards this house, I suddenly heard a tremendous noise, like a volley. The men rushed out of the cellar; I thought we had fallen

into an ambush which would lead to furious street-fighting, but it seemed that the men had knocked over a pile of thousands of bottles, and they were all crashing down. Then the men went away and came back carrying a great number of bottles. I got them to give me one and a bottle of red wine. Nearly all the men were drunk, entering the private houses and looting them.

"It is lawful to take possession of eatables for immediate use, but many of our men, especially those in charge of the baggage transport, stole watches and other valuables. This is abominable, and the more so as they loot so wantonly that what they cannot carry away, they trample under foot and destroy. . . .

Page 33. . . . "I visited the castle and saw how our cavalry had plundered it. The night before, French troops had been quartered there and had dined. Now the whole place was the abomination of desolation. All cupboards and chests were broken open and the clothes strewn about. That a lot of plundering was done as a matter of course, especially by the cavalry who arrive first seems to me excusable to some extent, but to smash great mirrors and break up valuable old furniture is absolutely low. Hungry animals were wandering about. . . . Chickens, ducks, pigs, all were carried away. . . . La guerre est la guerre [*sic*].

"Judging by a letter received from home, our folks have an idea that war is a much more humane business

than it really is. There is no longer any consideration, any sentimental or æsthetic feeling: all moral sense is deadened.

Page 37. "The men loot dreadfully; everything in the houses is turned upside down and often destroyed. Not even small personal ornaments escape. All rights of property are abolished; we are doing infinite injury to our reputation."[1]

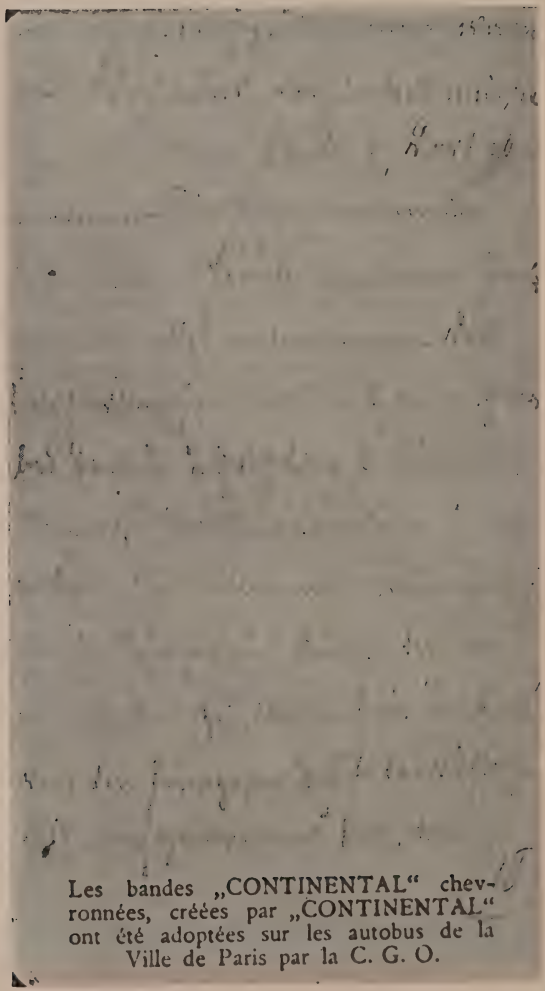
No. 56

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Hassemer of the 8th Army Corps, describing a massacre of French soldiers and civilians at Sommepy (Marne).

September 3. . . . "Ein schreckliches Blutbad. Dorf abgebrannt, die Franzosen in die brennenden Häuser geworfen, Zivilpersonen alles mitverbrannt."

September 3. . . . "A horrible bath of blood. The whole village burnt, the French thrown into the blazing houses, civilians burnt with the rest."

[1] This diary, which expresses the noblest sentiments throughout, is in the form of a letter addressed to the writer's parents.



Les bandes „CONTINENTAL“ chevronnées, créées par „CONTINENTAL“ ont été adoptées sur les autobus de la Ville de Paris par la C. G. O.

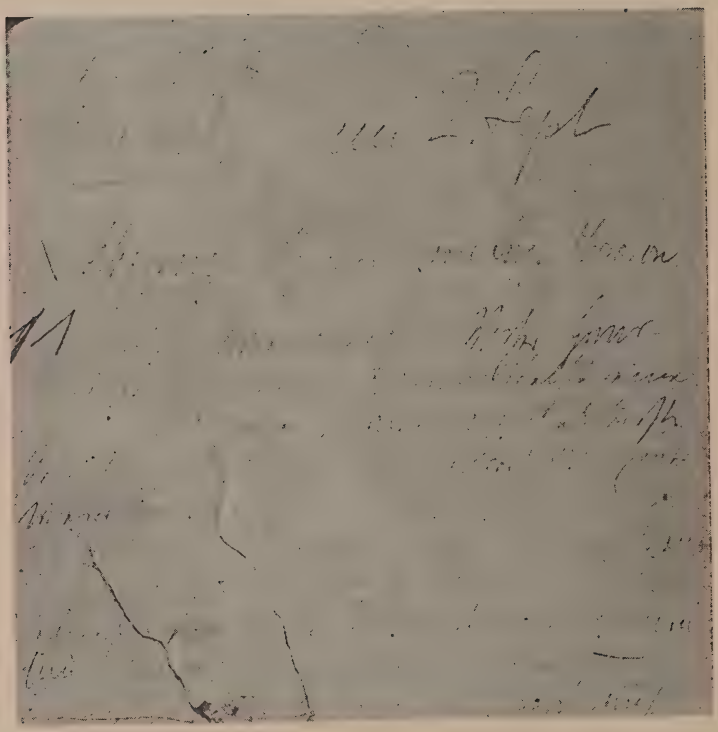
No. 56

No. 57

EXTRACT from the note-book of Ensign Baron von Hodenberg, of the 100*th Regiment of Grenadiers,* 12*th Army Corps, condemning the conduct of the German troops.*

"Rethel, am 2. Sept. Leider lässt die Disciplin mehr und mehr nach. Schnaps, Wein, n. Plündern sind an der Tagesordnung. Eine Schuld der Inftr. Namentlich die Kolonnen sind schlimm."

"Rethel, September 2. Unhappily discipline becomes more and more lax. Spirits, wine, and plunder are the order of the day. It is the fault of the superior Infantry. The transport troops are the worst of all."



No. 57

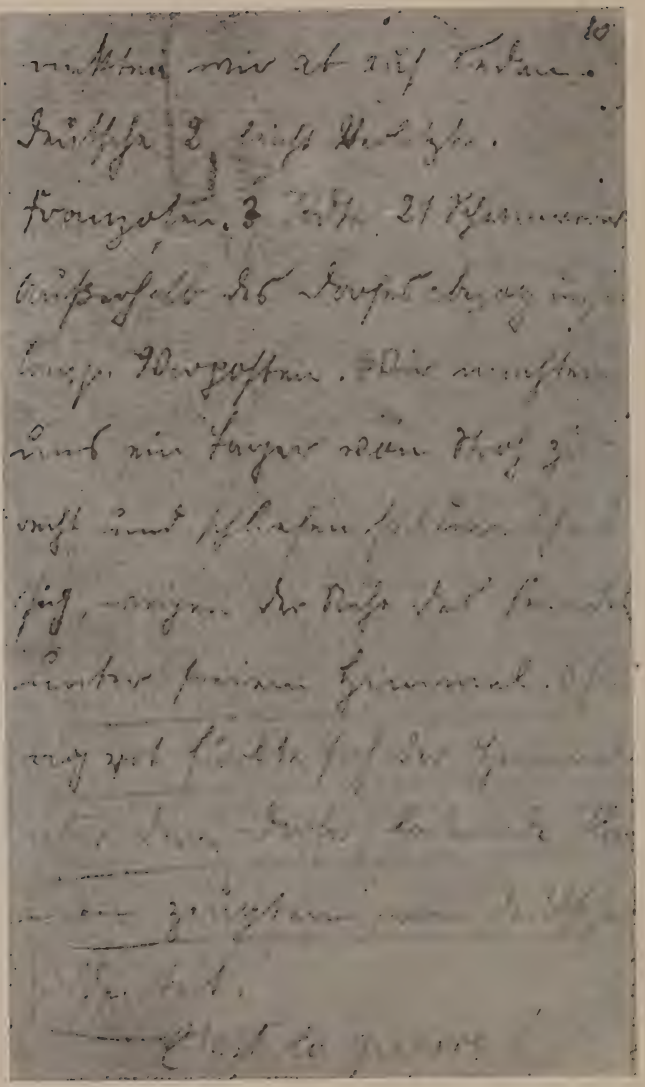
No. 58

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Hohl (9th Army Corps ?) describing the burning of a Belgian village and the murder of thirty-five civilians.

24 August. "Ausserhalb des Dorfes bezog unsere Comp. Vorposten. Wir machten uns ein Lager bon Stroh zurecht und schliefen feldmarschmässig, wegen der Nähe des Feindes, unter freien Himmel. Schaurig rot färbte sich der Himmel über dem Dorfe, lodernde Flammen zeugten von deutscher Heldentat. C'est la guerre!

25 August. "Unterwegs kommen wir durch Vresse; vor dem Dorfe liegen etwa 35 Zilivisten unter Führung des Pastors. Diese überfielen in der Nacht deutsche Truppen. Der Pastor gab das Zeichen mit der Kirchenglocke und so müssen sie auf Befehl niedergeschossen werden."

August 24. "Our company occupied some outposts outside the village. We made a resting-place with



No. 58

bundles of straw, and slept in the open air on the *qui vive*, because of the proximity of the enemy. Above the village the sky was dyed a dreadful red, and dancing flames bore witness to a deed of German heroism! *C'est la guerre !*

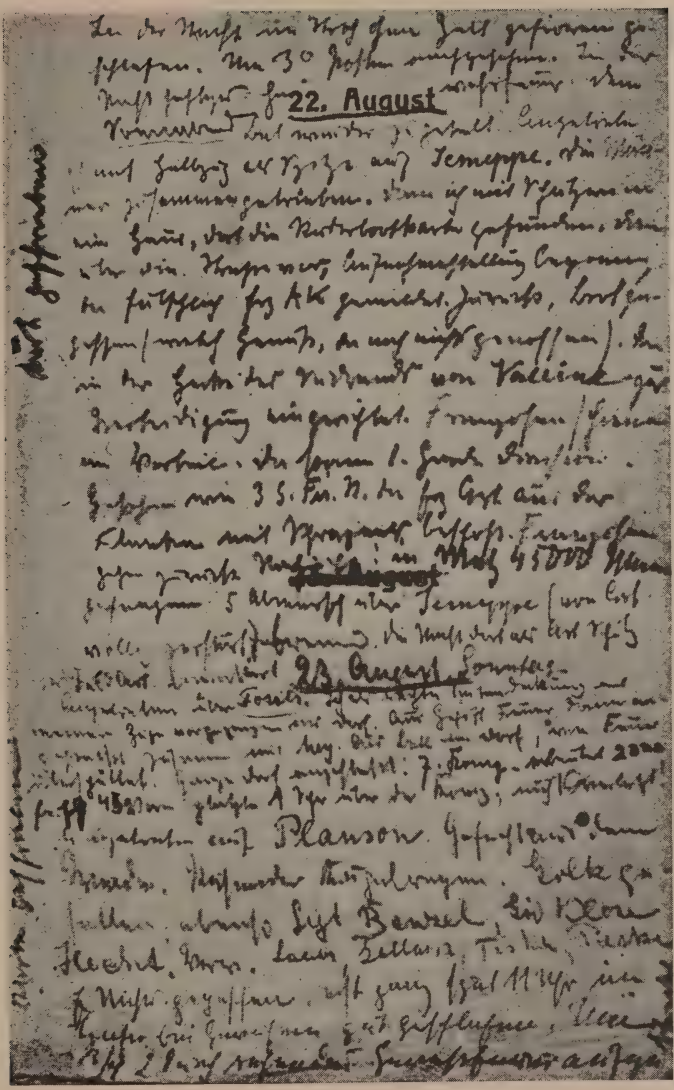
August 25. "On the march we passed through Vresse. Thirty-five dead civilians are still lying outside the village. They had attacked German soldiers at night, led by the parish priest. This priest gave the signal by ringing the church-bell, and this was why the order was given to shoot them down."

No. 59

EXTRACT from the note-book of Lieutenant von Jonquières, of the 3d Regiment of Grenadier Guards, describing the burning of the village of Fosse (Belgium) and the distribution of the money looted there to the soldiers.

"Ich als rechte Seitendeckung mit meinem Zuge vorgegangen ins Dorf. Aus Gehöft Feuer, dann angesteckt, zusammen mit Mey. Als Bataillon im Dorf, von Feuer überschüttet. Ganze Dorf angesteckt. 7 Komp. erbeutet 2000 francs."

"Advanced with my section into the village, as flanking cover on the right. Some shots were fired from a farm, so it was burnt, with Mey. . . . When the battalion entered the village, there was a hail of bullets, so we burnt the whole village, and the 7th Company got 2000 francs of booty."



No. 59

No. 60

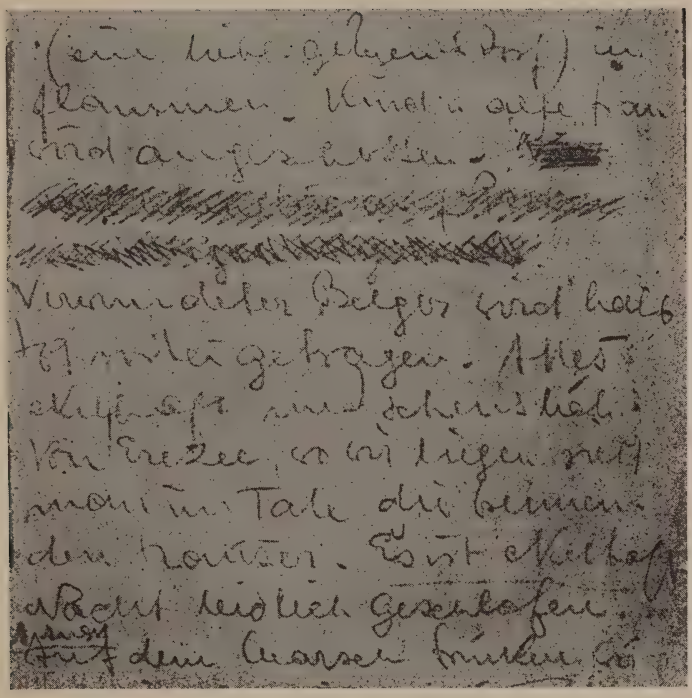
EXTRACT from the note-book of Adjutant G. J. Kohler, of the 13th Battalion of Light Horse (Reserve), 12th Corps, recording arson and murder in Belgium.

"19 August 1914. Unsere Proviantkolonne (Erezée) wird angebl. angeschossen. Binnen wenigen Augenblicken steht Birisceau (?) (ein liebl. gelegenes Dorf) in Flammen. Kind und alte Frau wird angeschossen. (Vier sind lebendig auf Protzen, *two lines, partly erased and partly illegible.*) Verwundeter Belgier wird halb tot weitergetragen. Alles ekelhaft und scheuslich. Von Erezée, wo wir liegen, sieht man im Tale die brennenden Häuser. Es ist ekelhaft.

" . . . Nördlich von unserer Marschrichtung traf man wieder ein grosses Dorf eingeäschert."

"August 19, 1914. It is said that our Commissariat section was fired upon (Erezée). In a few minutes Birisceau (?), a charmingly situated village, was in flames. A child and an old woman were shot. . . . A wounded Belgian was carried away half dead. The whole business was revolting and horrible. From Erezée, where we are bivouacking, we see the burning houses in the valley.

" . . . To the north of our route we passed another large village reduced to ashes."



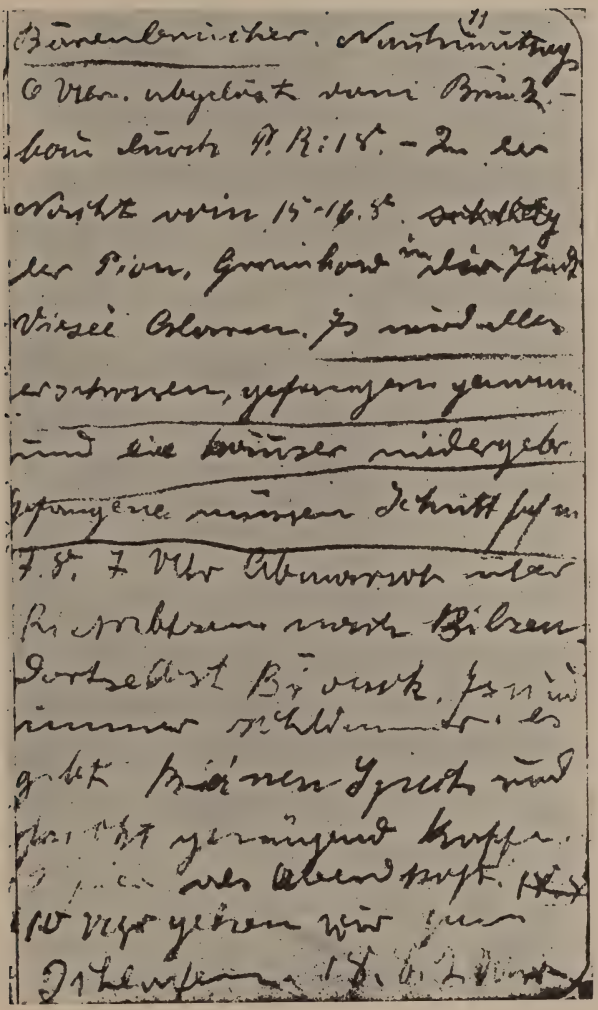
No. 60

No. 61

EXTRACT from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Reinhold Koehn, of the 2d Battalion of Engineers, 3d Army Corps, recording the sack of Visé (Belgium).

"In der Nacht vom 15–16. 8./schlug der Pion. Gr. in der Stadt Visée Alarm. Es wird alles erschossen, gefangen genommen und die Häuser niedergebr. Gefangene müssen Schritt fahren."

"During the night of August 15–16, Engineer Gr. . . . gave the alarm in the town of Visé. Everyone was shot or taken prisoner, and the houses were burnt. The prisoners were made to march and keep up with the troops."



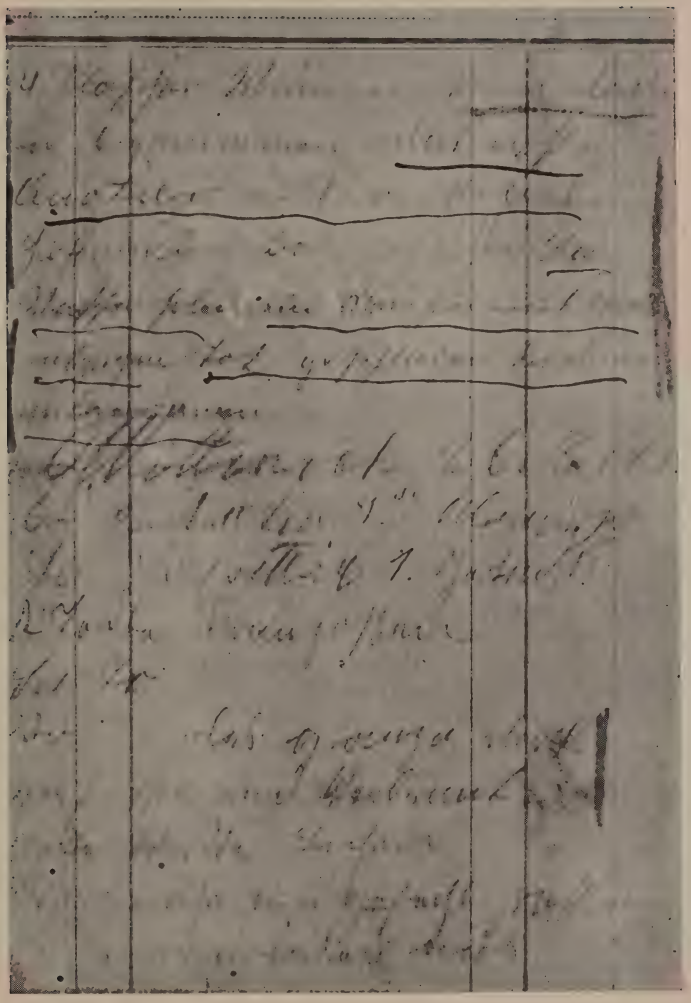
No. 61

No. 62

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Fritz Krain, of the 4th Battalion of Light Horse (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, concerning the murder of a young girl.

"Vier Flaschen Wein mit in Dachs mitgenommen. Das erste Quartier in Frankreich. Hoffendlich bald Gefecht. Bei Wasser holen ein Mädchen mit Revolver entgegen. Tot geschlagen. Revolver abgenommen."

"Carried off four bottles of wine in my bag. Our first bivouac in France. There will soon be a battle, I hope. When we went to fetch water we encountered a girl with a revolver. Shot her dead and took her revolver."



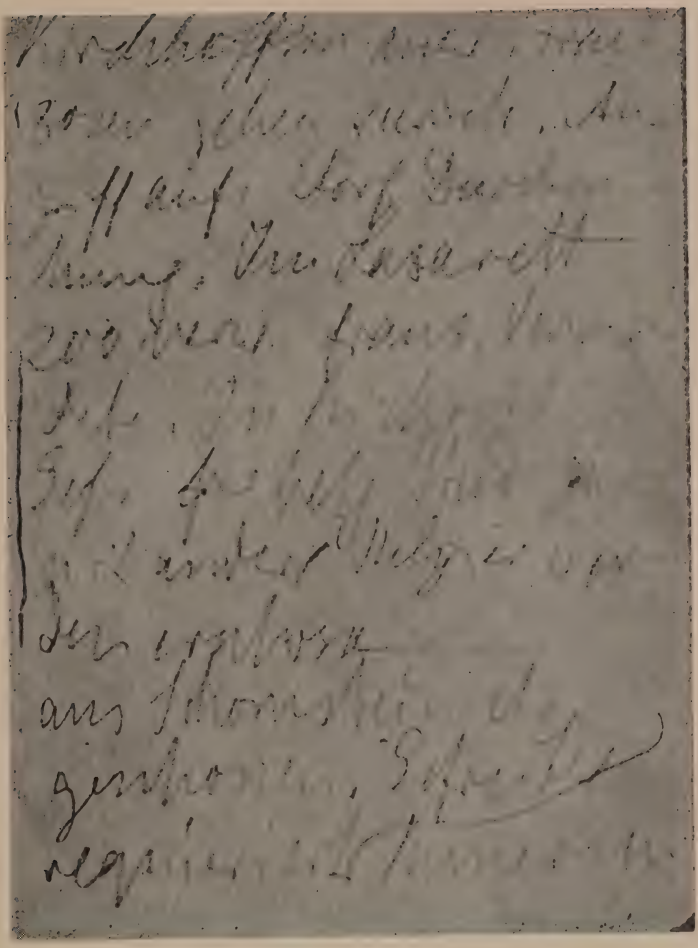
No. 62

No. 63

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Langerhaus of the 77th Regiment of Infantry, 10th Army Corps, recording the murder of Belgian civilians.

"In Kirche 300 Gef. Belg. Stud-jur. mit andere Belgier werden erschossen."

"Three hundred Belgian prisoners in the church. Law-students and other Belgians were shot."



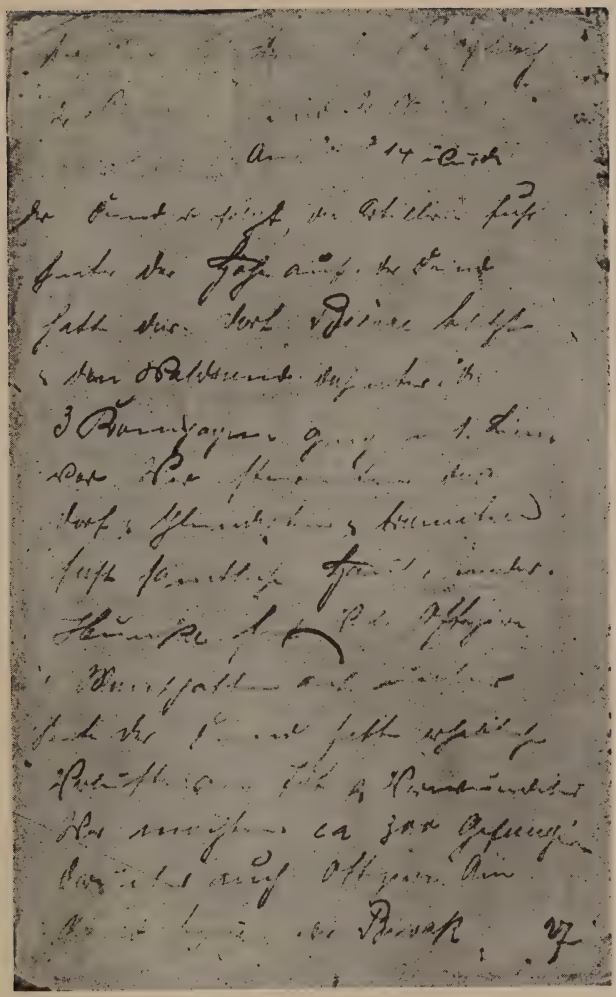
No. 63

No. 64

EXTRACT from the note-book of non-commissioned officer Levith (or Levick), of the 3d Company of the 160th Regiment of Infantry, 8th Army Corps, recording the looting and burning of Bièvre.

23 August. "Der Feind hatte das Dorf Bièvre besetzt und den Waldrand dahiner. Die 3. Kompagnie ging in 1. Linie vor. Wir stürmten das Dorf und plünderten und brannten fast sämtliche Häuser nieder."

August 23. "The enemy had occupied the village of Bièvre and the outskirts of the wood behind it. The 3d Company advanced in the first line. We stormed the village and plundered and burnt nearly all the houses."



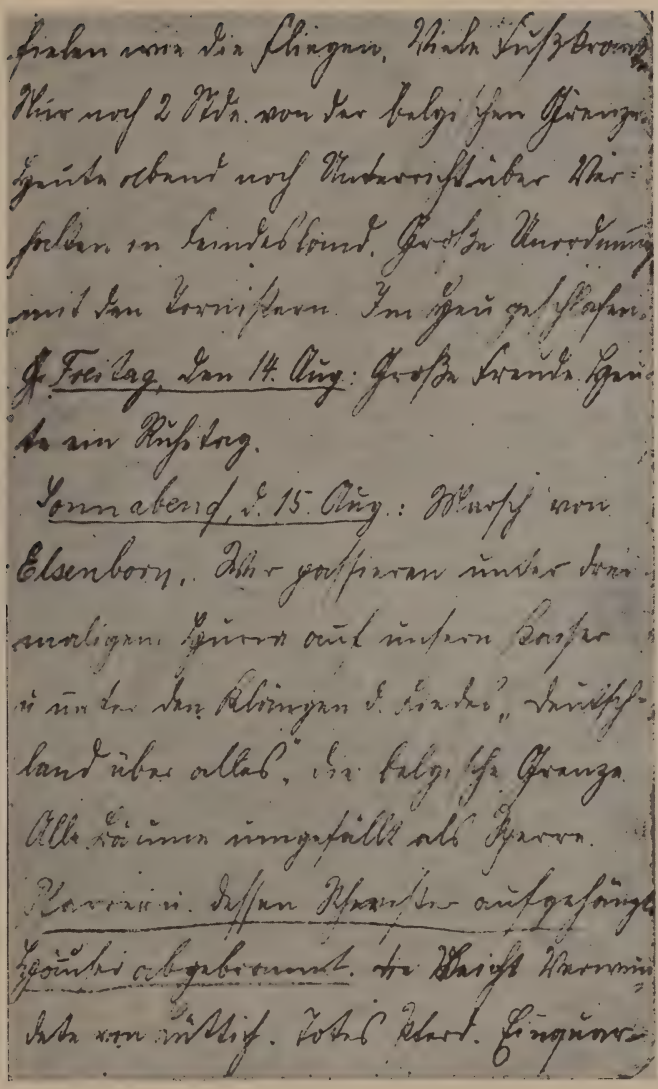
No. 64

No. 65

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Menge, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, recording the hanging of a Belgian priest and his sister.

Sonnabend d. 15. Aug. "Marsch von Elsenborn. Wir passieren unter dreimaligen Hurra auf unsern Kaiser und unter den Klängen d. Liedes *Deutschland über alles* die belgische Grenze. Alle Bäume umgefällt als Sperre. Pfarrer u. dessen Schwester aufgehängt. Häuser abgebrannt."

Saturday, August 15. "Marched from Elsenborn. Giving three cheers for our Emperor and singing *Deutschland über Alles*, we crossed the Belgian frontier. All trees cut down to serve as barricades. A parish priest and his sister hanged. Houses burnt."

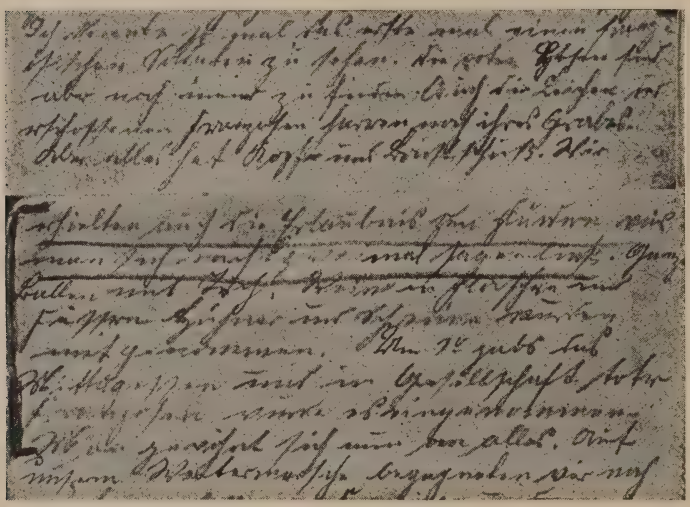


No. 65

No. 66

EXTRACT from the note-book of the stretcher-bearer Joseph Ott, 33d Division, 16th Army Corps, describing the looting of a village by permission of officers.

"Die Leichen der erschossenen Franzosen harren noch



No. 66

ihres Grabes, aber alles hat Kopf- und Brustschuss. Wir erhielten auch die Erlaubnis zum plündern, was man sich nicht zweimal sagen liess. Ganze Ballen mit

Tuch, Wein in Flaschen und Fässern, Hühner und Schweine wurden mitgenommen. Um 1° gabs das Mittagessen und in Gesellschaft toter Franzosen wurde es eingenommen. Man gewöhnt sich nun an alles."

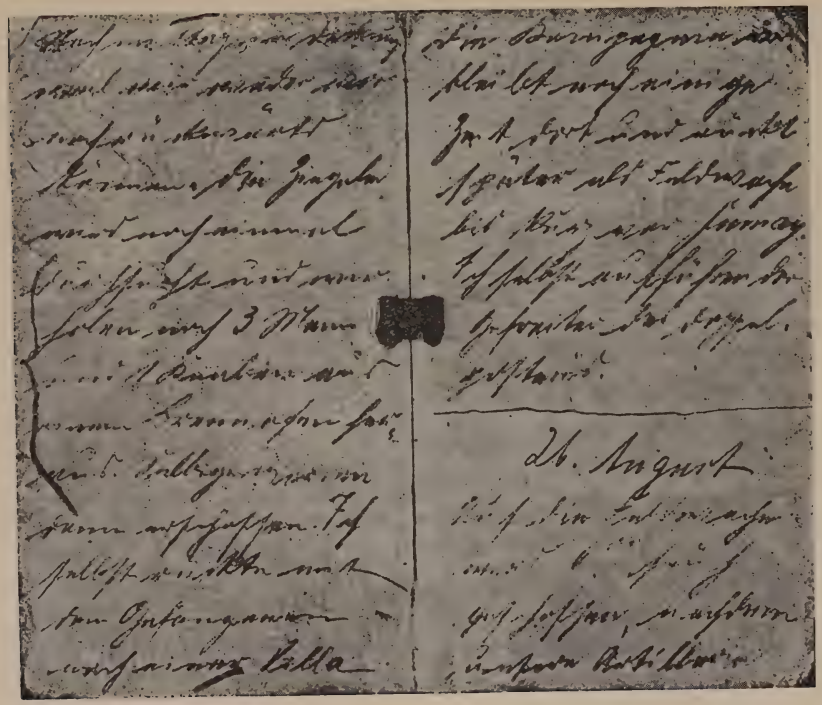
"The corpses of the Frenchmen still wait for burial, but they all got a bullet in the head or the breast. Leave was given us to loot, and we did not need to be told twice. Bales of cloth, wine in bottles and flasks, fowls, and pigs were taken away. We had dinner at 1 o'clock and it was eaten in the company of dead Frenchmen. One gets used to everything."

No. 67

EXTRACT from the note-book of Max Peich, 17th Regiment of Infantry, 14th Army Corps, recording the murder of three men and a boy at Fumay (Ardennes).

24 August. "Die Ziegelei wird noch einmal durchsucht und wir holen noch 3 Mann und 1 Knaben aus einem Brennhofen heraus. Selbige werden dann erschossen."

August 24. "The brick-works were searched once more and three men and a youngster were brought out of one of the kilns. They were shot forthwith."



No. 67

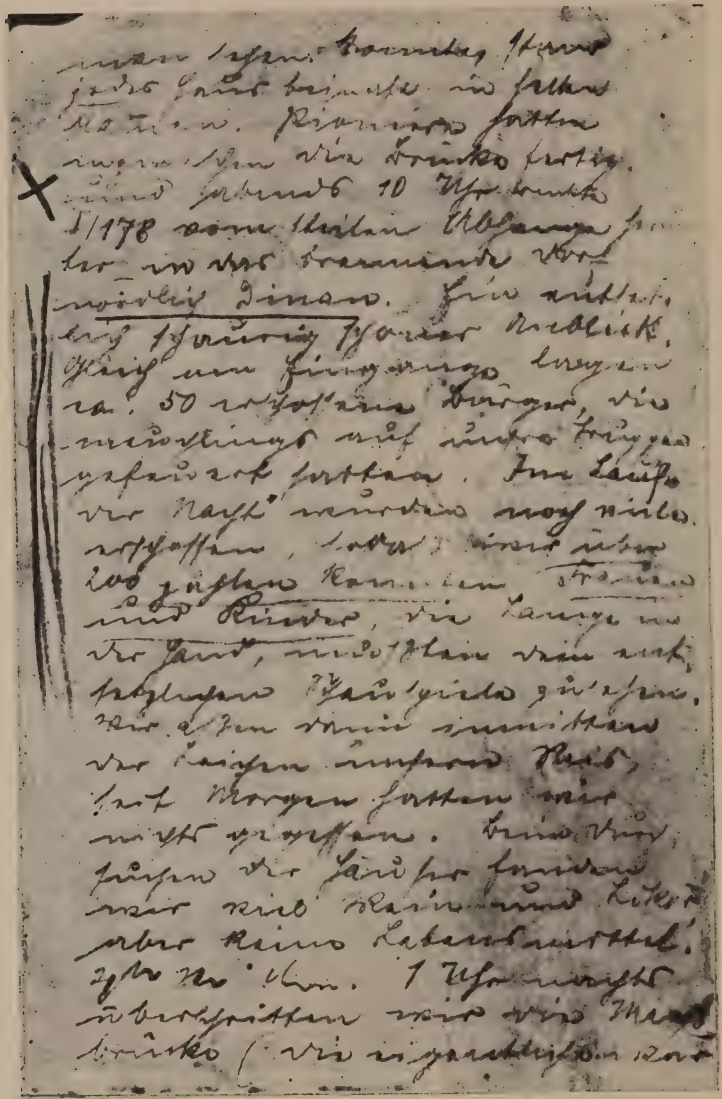
No. 68

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Philipp, of the 178th Regiment of Infantry, 12th Army Corps, describing the massacre of the civil population in a village near Dinant.

"Abends 10 Uhr rückte I 178 vom steilen Abhange herunter in das brennende Dorf nördlich Dinant. Ein entsetzlich schaurig schöner Anblick.

"Gleich am Eingange lagen ca. 50 erschossene Bürger, die meuchlings auf unsre Truppen gefeuert hatten. Im Laufe der Nacht wurden noch viele erschossen, sodass wir über 200 zählen konnten. Frauen und Kinder, die Lampe in der Hand, mussten dem entzetzlichen Schauspiele zusehen. Wir assen dann immitten der Leichen unsern Reis, seit Morgen hatten wir nichts gegessen. Beim Durchsuchen der Häuser, fanden wir viel Wein und Likor, aber keine Lebensmittel. Hauptmann Hamann war betrunken."

"At 10 o'clock in the evening the first battalion of the 178th marched down the steep incline into the burning village to the north of Dinant. A terrific



No. 68

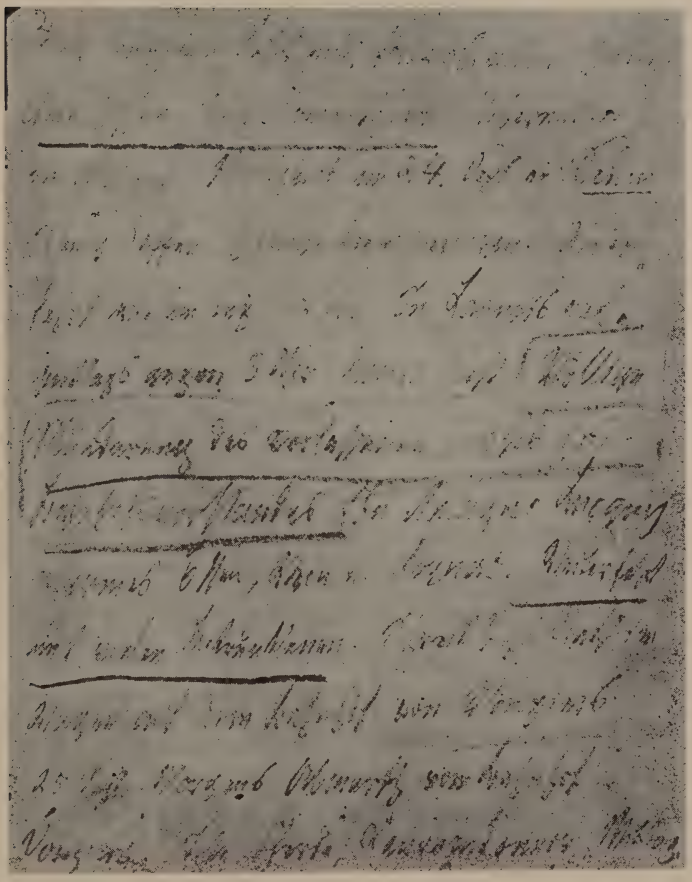
spectacle of ghastly beauty. At the entrance to the village lay about fifty dead civilians, shot for having fired upon our troops from ambush. In the course of the night, many others were also shot, so that we counted over 200. Women and children, lamp in hand, were forced to look on at the horrible scene. We ate our rice later in the midst of the corpses, for we had had nothing since morning. When we searched the houses we found plenty of wine and spirit, but no eatables. Captain Hamann was drunk." [This last phrase in shorthand.]

No. 69

EXTRACT from the note-book of the volunteer recruit, Quell, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry, 19th Army Corps, recording the plundering of the Station-master's house at Launois (Ardennes).

"Morgens am 24 Sept. in Sedan Wein und Kaffee. Einige Leute verloren. Weiterfahrt wie am Tag vorher. In Launois nachmittags gegen 3 Uhr lange Rast. Völlige Plünderung des verlassenen Hauses des Bahnhofsvorstandes. In Amagne-Lucquy warmes Essen, Wein u. Cognac. Weiterfahrt mit vielen betrunkenen."

"In the morning of September 24 at Sédan, wine and coffee. Lost a few men. Continued our march in the same manner as yesterday. In the afternoon, about 3 o'clock, a long halt at Launois. Looted the station-master's forsaken house most thoroughly. At Amagne-Lucquy, hot food, wine, and brandy. Continued our march, with a great many of the men drunk."



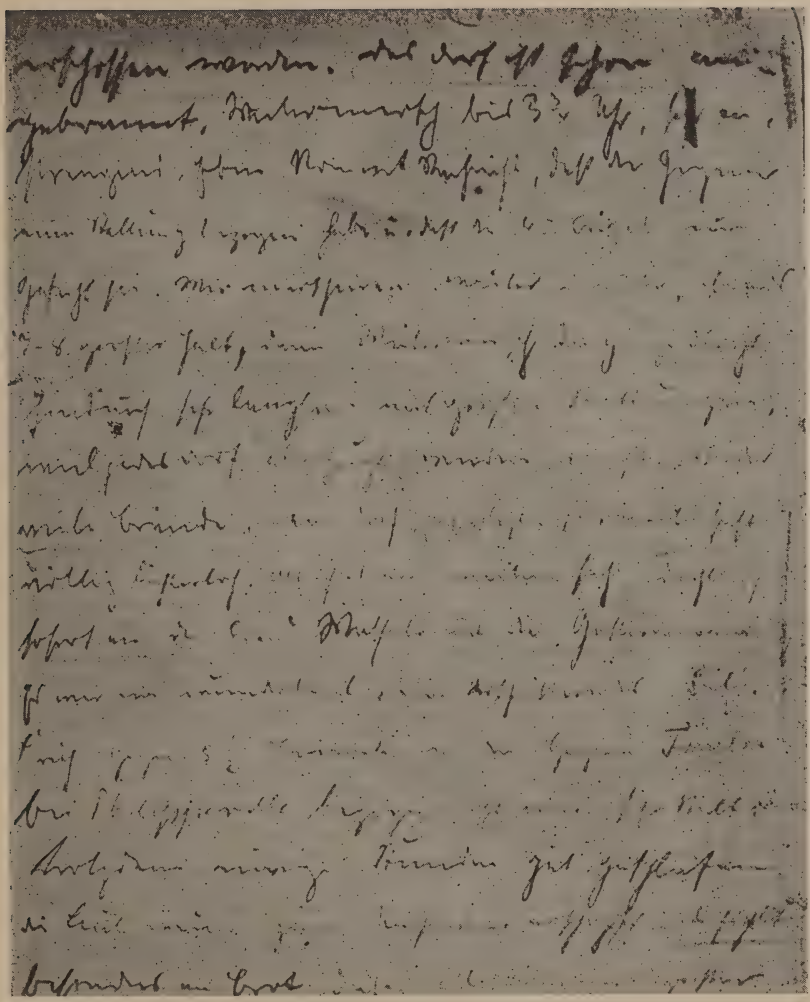
No. 69

No. 70

EXTRACT from the note-book of Lieutenant Reisland, of the 117th Regiment of Infantry, 12th Army Corps, describing the burning of several villages in Belgium.

25 August, 1914. "Wieder viele Brände, ein Dorf, hoch gelegen, brannte fast völlig lichterloh. Als ich es von weiten sah, dachte ich sofort an den Brand Walhalas in der *Götterdämmerung*. Es war ein wunderbares, aber erschütterndes Bild."

August 25, 1914. "More burning. A village perched on a height was almost entirely in flames. When I saw it in the distance, I thought of the burning of Valhalla in the *Götterdämmerung*. A magnificent, but heart-rending sight."



No. 70

No. 71

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Rudolf Rossberg, of the 101st Grenadier Regiment, 2d Saxons, 12th Army Corps, describing the looting at Dinant and Laval-Morency.

Dinant, August 23. "Auf dem Pflaster schlafen wir nicht weit von den Leichen ein, nachdem wir vorher noch 2 Cafés geplündert hatten. Gegen 150 Wein Sekt und Likörflaschen waren der Erfolg. Wir sind ausgehungert und nehmen alles mit, Brot, Butter, Cafe . . . (*illegible word*), Fleisch, Schinken, kurz alles.

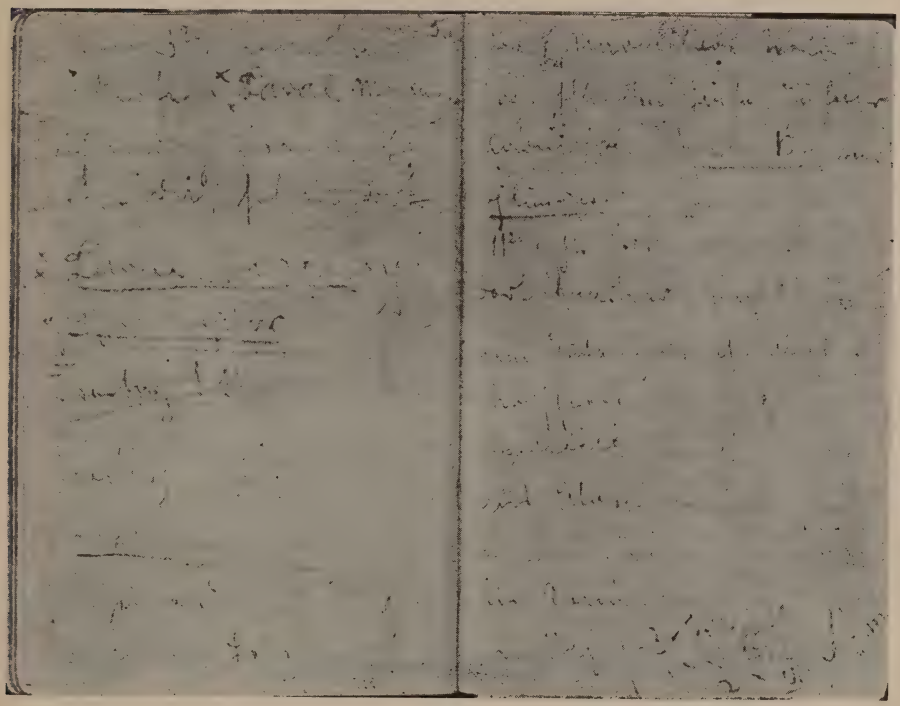
August 28. "Laval-Morency. Grosser Fresstag.

Freitag. "Anscheinend Ruhetag. Fassen alle Lebensmittel, Brot, Marmelade, Wein, Zig., schlachten Gänse, Hühner, Karnickel, spiele Klavier, plündern feste."

Dinant, August 23. "We sleep on the pavement, not far from the corpses, after looting two more cafés. About 150 bottles of wine, champagne, and liqueurs were the results of this operation. We were ravenous, and carried off everything, bread, butter, coffee . . . (*illegible word*), meat, ham, in a word everything.

August 28. "Laval-Morency. Great day of gorging.

Friday. "Apparently a day of rest. We get hold of all sorts of provisions, bread, preserves, wine, cigars,



No. 71

kill geese, chickens, rabbits, etc. . . . I play the piano, and we loot steadily."

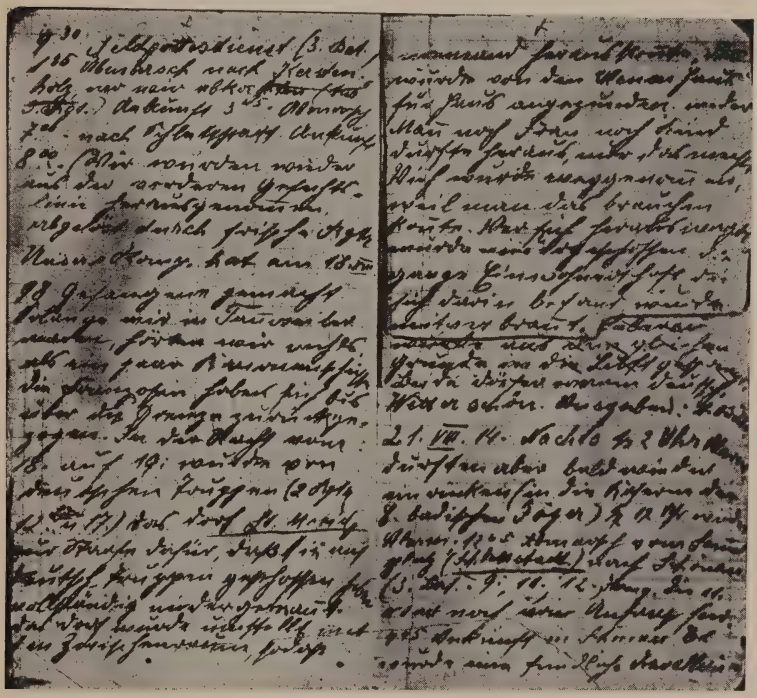
No. 72

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Karl Scheufele of the 3d Bavarian Regiment of Landwehr Infantry, describing the burning of Saint-Maurice (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and its inhabitants.

"In der Nacht vom 18 auf 19. wurde von deutschen Truppen (2 Rgtr 12 Ldw. u. 17.) das Dorf St. Moritz zur Strafe dafür, dass sie auf deutsche Truppen geschossen haben, vollständig niedergebrannt. Das Dorf wurde umstellt mit 1 m. Zwischenraum, so dass Niemand herauskonnte, dann wurde von den Ulanen Haus für Haus angezunden. Weder Mann noch Frau noch Kind durfte heraus, nur das meiste Vieh wurde weggenommen, weil man das brauchen konnte. Wer sich heraus wagte, wurde niedergeschossen. Die ganze Einwohnerschaft, die sich darin befand, wurde mitverbrannt."

"In the night of August 18–19, the village of Saint-Maurice was punished for having fired on German soldiers, by being burnt to the ground by the German troops (2 regiments, the 12th Landwehr and the 17th).

The village was surrounded, men posted about a yard from one another, so that no one could get out. Then the Uhlans set fire to it, house by house. Neither man,



No. 72

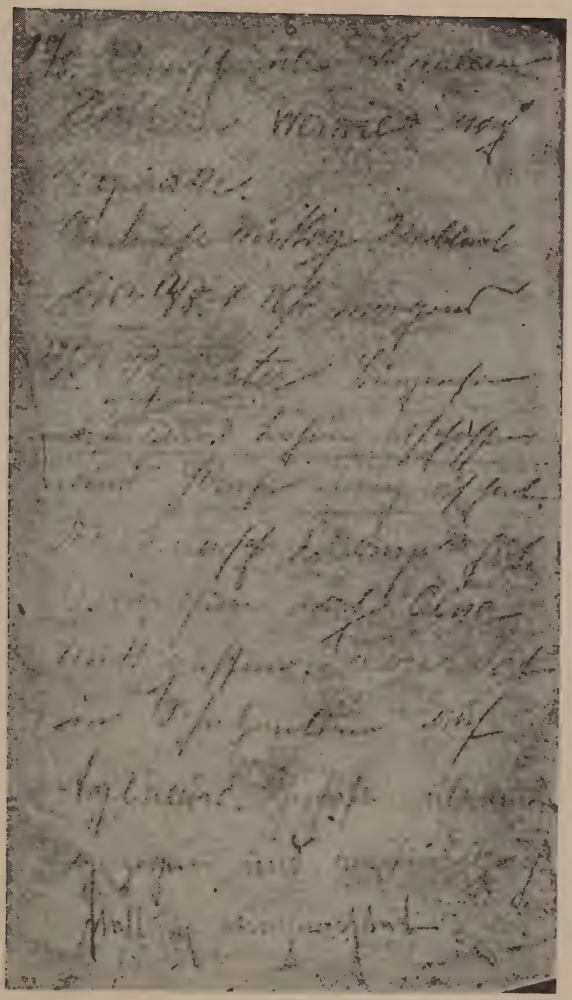
woman, nor child could escape; only the greater part of the live stock we carried off, as that could be used. Any one who ventured to come out was shot down. All the inhabitants left in the village were burnt with the houses."

No. 73

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Adolf Schlutter, of the 39th Regiment of Fusiliers, 7th Reserve Corps, recording murders and arson at Pepinster (Belgium).

"12.8. Pepinster. Bürgermeister, Pfarrer und Lehrer erschossen und Häuser eingeäschert. Weitermarsch."

"August 12. Pepinster. The burgomaster, the priest, and the schoolmaster shot, houses reduced to ashes. We continue our march."



No. 73

No. 74

EXTRACT from the note-book of Non-commissioned Officer Schulz, of the 46th Regiment of Infantry.

"Es hiess zuerst dass wir ins Quartier nach Billy kommen sollten, wo die ganze Civilbevölkerung bereits vertrieben, und das Mobiliär teils genommen, teils unbrauchbar gemacht worden ist. Diese Art Kriegführung ist direkt barbarisch. Ich wundere mich, wie wir über das Verhalten der Russen schimpfen können; wir hausen ja in Frankreich weit schlimmer, und bei jeder Gelegenheit wird unter irgend einem Vorwande gebrannt und geplündert. Aber Gott ist gerecht und sieht alles: 'Seine Mühlen mahlen langsam, aber schrecklich klein.'"

October 15, 1914.

"It was given out at first that we would take up our quarters at Billy, from which place the entire civil population had already been expelled, and all household effects either removed or destroyed. This method of making war is absolutely barbarous. I wonder how

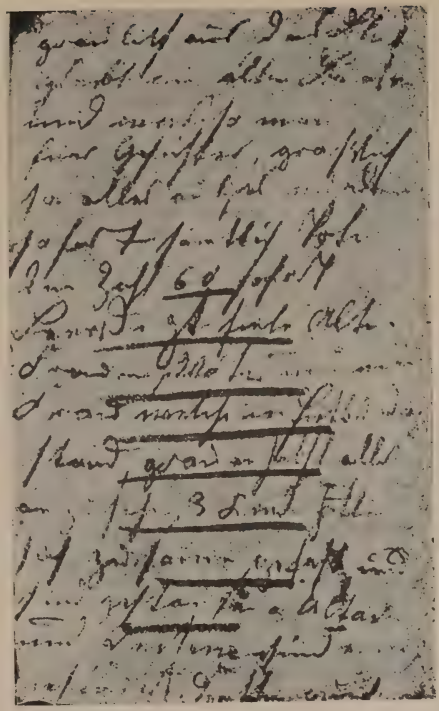
No. 74

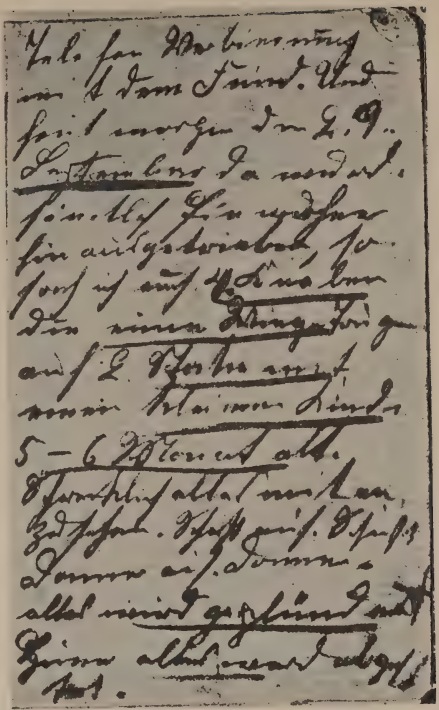
we can have the face to rail at the conduct of the Russians when we are behaving much worse in France; at every opportunity, on one pretext or another, we pillage and burn. But God is just and sees everything. His mills grind slowly, but they 'grind exceeding small.'"

No. 75

EXTRACT from the note-book of Lance-Corporal Paul Spielmann, of the Ersatz, 1st Brigade of Infantry of the Guard, recording the massacre of the inhabitants of a village near Blamont.

"Die Einwohner sind geflüchtet im Dorf. Da sa es gräulich aus. Das Blut glebt an alle Bärte, und was sa man für Gesichter, grässlich sa alles aus. Es wurde sofort sämtliche Tote, die Zahl 60, sofort beerdigt. Fiele alte Frauen, Väter, und eine Frau, welche in Entbindung stand, grauenhalt alles anzusehen. 3 Kinder hatten sich zusammengefast und sind gestorbe. Altar und Decken sind eingestürtzt. Hatte auch Telefon-Verbindung mit dem Feind. Und heut morgen, den 2, 9., da wurden sämtliche Einwohner hinausgetrieben, so sah ich auch 4 Knaben, die eine Wiege trugen auf 2 Stöcke mit einem kleinem Kinde 5–6 Monat alt. Schrecklich alles mitanzusehen. Schuss auf Schuss! Donner auf Donner! Alles wird geplündert, Hüner alles ward abgeschlachtet (?) (*on the following page*):





No. 75

Mutter mit ihren beiden Kinder, der eine hatte eine grosse Wunde am Kopf und ein Auge verloren."

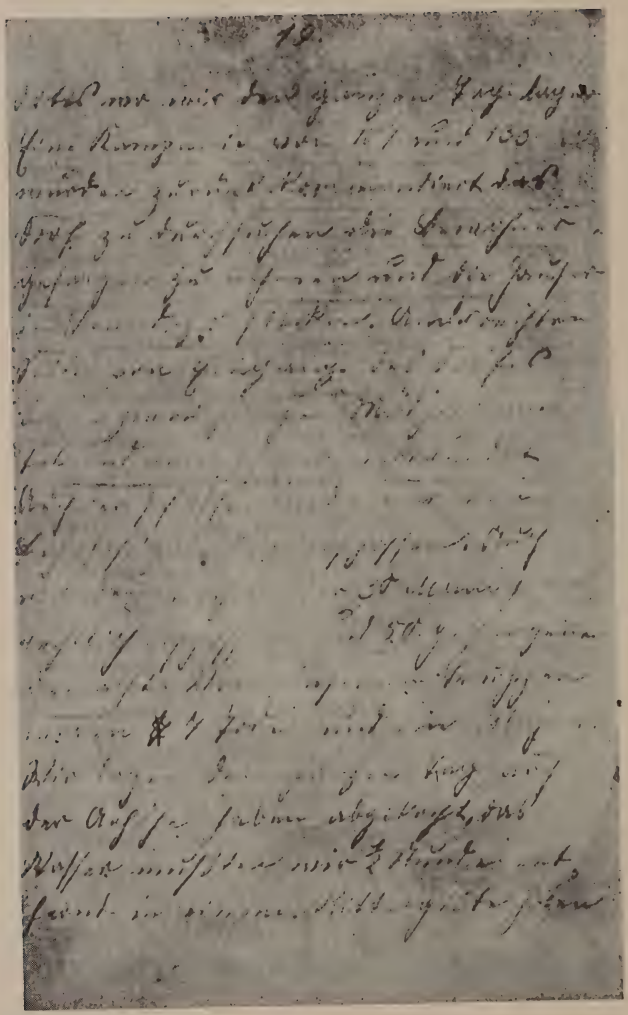
"The inhabitants have fled in the village. It was horrible. There was clotted blood on all the beards, and what faces one saw, terrible to behold! The dead, sixty in all, were at once buried. Among them were many old women, some old men, and a half-delivered woman, awful to see; three children had clasped each other and died thus. The altar and the vaults of the church are shattered. They had a telephone there to communicate with the enemy. This morning, September 2, all the survivors were expelled, and I saw four little boys carrying a cradle, with a baby five or six months old in it, on two sticks. All this was terrible to see. Shot after shot! Thunder-bolt after thunder-bolt! Everything is given over to pillage; fowls and the rest all killed. I saw a mother too, with her two children; one had a great wound on the head and had lost an eye."

No. 76

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Max Thomas, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry (8th Saxons) 19th Army Corps, describing the crimes committed by the German troops at Spontin (Belgium).

23 August, Spontin. "Eine Kompagnie von 107 und 108 wurden zurückkommandiert das Dorf zu durchsuchen, die Bewohner gefangen zu nehmen und die Häuser in Brand zu stecken. An der rechten Seite von [*sic*] Eingange des Dorfes lagen zwei junge Mädchen, eine tot und eine schwer verwundet. Auch der Pfaffe wurde vor dem Bahnhofsgebäude erschossen. Auch wurden noch ander 30 Mann standrechtlich erschossen und 50 gefangen gemacht."

August 23, Spontin. "A company of the 107th and 108th had orders to stay behind and search the village, take the inhabitants prisoners, and burn the houses. At the entrance to the village, on the right, lay two young girls, one dead, the other severely wounded. The priest too was shot in front of the station. Thirty other men were shot according to martial law, and fifty were made prisoners."



No. 76

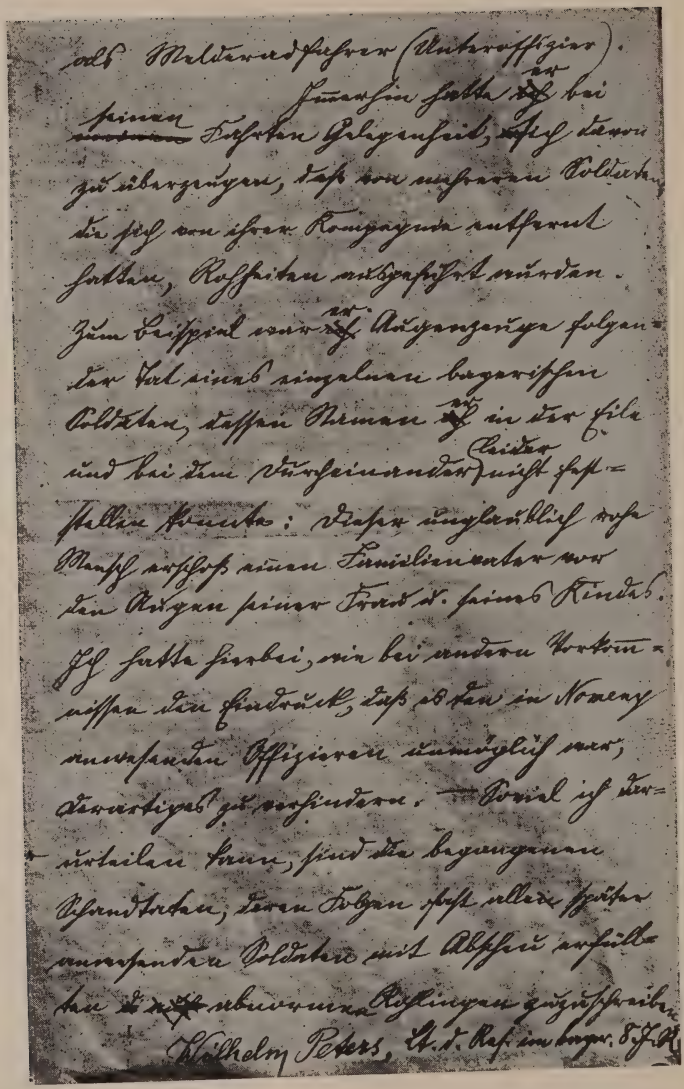
No. 77

EXTRACT from the diary of Fr. Treinen, a volunteer enlisted in the 237th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the murder of a young man near Roulers (Belgium).

19 Oktober, 1914. "Die Einwohner des Gutes, feine, reiche Leute, jammern Gotterbärmlich. Wurden durchsucht und bei einem jungen Mann von 21 Jahre findet man ein Revolver. Brüllend vor Angst wird er vor dem Hof geschleppt und vor den Augen der Eltern und Geschwister erschossen. Ich kann nicht hinschauen. Dann ein Streichholz an die wunderschöne Scheune und alles ist verloren."

October 19, 1914. "The owners of this property, rich and distinguished-looking people, fill the air with their lamentations and call upon the mercy of God. We make a search and find a revolver on the person of a young man of 21. Screaming with terror he is dragged out to the front of the farm-house and there shot before the eyes of his parents and brothers and sisters.

"The sight was more than I could stand. After that a light was put to the splendid barn and everything was destroyed."



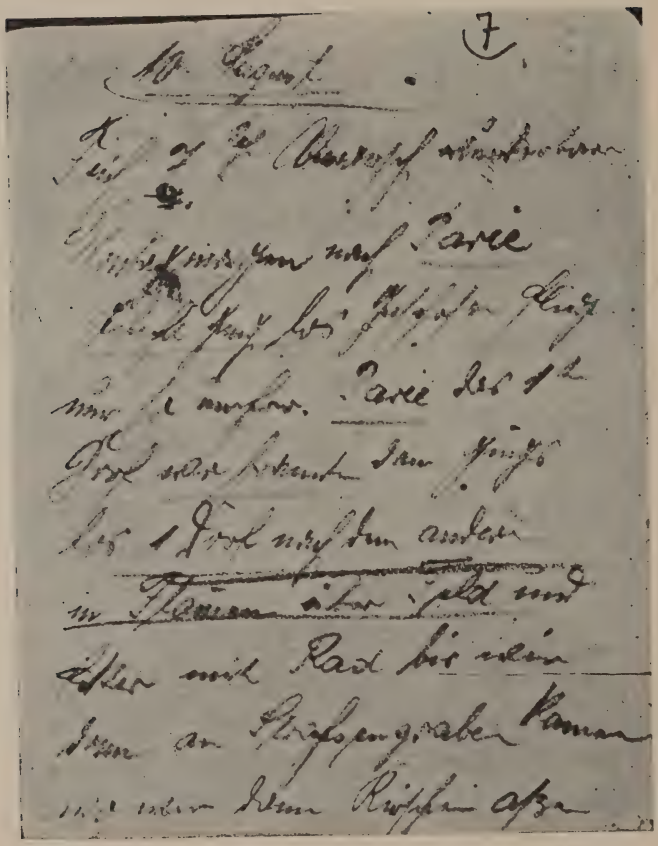
No. 77

No. 78

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Weishaupt, of the 3d Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 1st Bavarian Corps, recording the burning of Parux (Meurthe-et-Moselle), and other villages of Lorraine.

"10 August. . . . Parie das 1te Dorf verbrannt, dann gings los 1 Dorf nach dem andern in Flammen; über Feld und Acker mit Rad bis wir dann an Strassengraben kamen, wo wir dann Kirschen assen."

"August 10. Parux was the first village burnt, then we got to work, and one village after another burst into flames; we rode on bicycles over fields and meadows until we came to some wayside ditches, where we ate cherries."



No. 78

No. 79

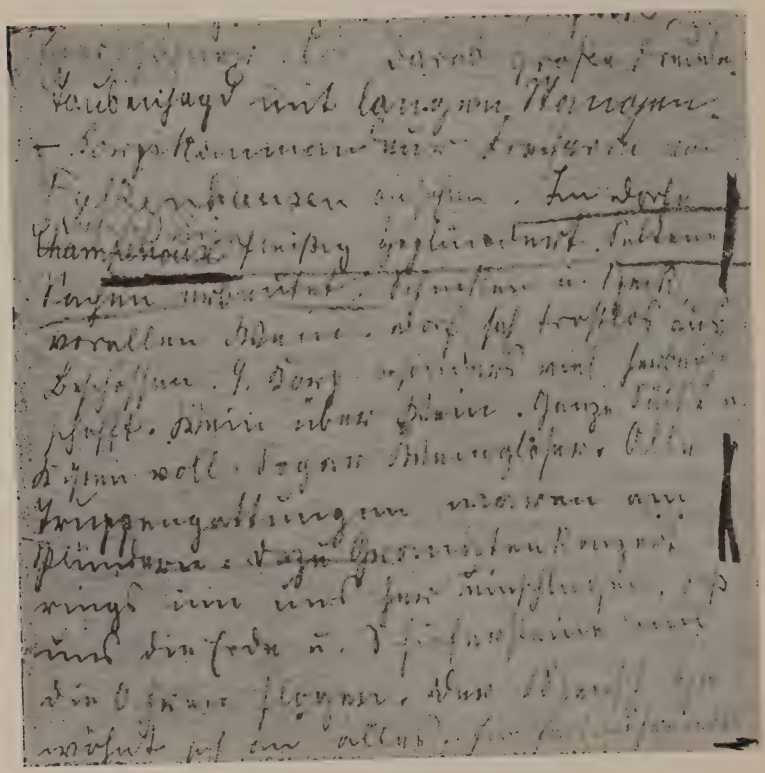
EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Willmer of the 40th Brigade, Ersatz Battalion 10th Division, Ersatz Corps, recording the plundering at Champenoux, at Brin (Meurthe-et-Moselle), and at Loupmont (Meuse).

"5 September. Im Dorfe Champenoux —(*between the lines*): (Bahnhof) Brin—fleissig geplündert. Seltene Sachen erbeutet, Schinken u. Speck, vor allen Wein. Dorf sah trostlos aus. Beschossen. . . . Wein über Wein. Ganze Säcke u. Kisten voll. Sogar Weingläser. Alle Truppengattungen waren am Plündern. Dazu Granatenkonzert.

"5 Oktober. In Loupmont schönes Schloss, Zimmer, darin pers. Teppich, darauf Sau gelegen, geschlachtet, im Bett ein Spanferkel, auch geschlachtet. Blut Treppe hinunter geflossen."

"September 5. In the village of Champenoux—*between the lines* (station) Brin, looted busily. Some rare things as booty, ham and bacon, and above all wine. The village was a pitiable sight. Bombarded. . . . Wine and more wine. Sacks and cases

full. Even wineglasses. The soldiers of every arm shared in the spoils, and plundered to the music of the shells.



No. 79

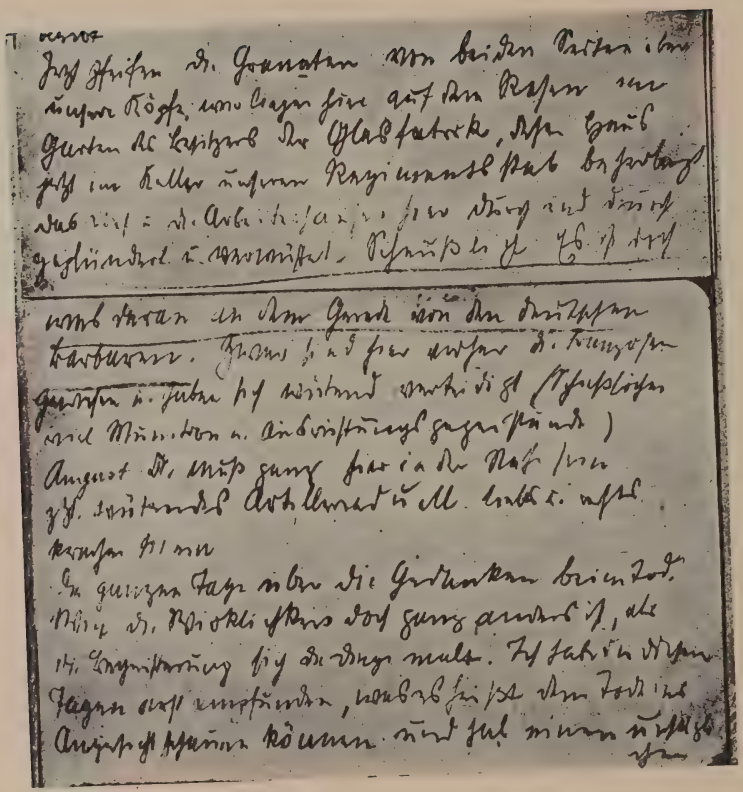
"October 5. At Loupmont a fine country house, beautiful room with Persian carpet; a slaughtered sow on it; in bed a sucking-pig also slaughtered. Blood running down the stairs."

No. 80

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Hans Wix, of the 78th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve) 10th Reserve Corps, condemning the conduct of the German troops.

"Wir leigen hier auf dem Rasen im Garten des Besitzers der Glasfabrik, dessen Haus jetzt im Keller unseren Regimentsstab beherbergt. Das Dorf und die Arbeiterhäuser hier durch und durch geplündert und verwüstet. Scheusslich. Es ist doch was daran an dem Gerede von den deutschen Barbaren."

Courey (north of Reims). October 22. "We are lying on the lawn here in the garden of the owner of the glass-factory, whose house at present shelters the staff of our regiment in its cellar. The village and the workmen's houses have been plundered and ransacked from garret to basement. Horrible. There is really some truth in all the talk about German barbarians."



No. 80

III

French and German Evidence of the Crimes committed at Nomeny (Meurthe-et-Moselle) by the Bavarian Troops.

No. 81

DEPOSITION of M. Charles-Ferdinand Barbe. Police report dated August 24, 1914.

We, the undersigned, Xavier Guichard, Commissary of Police of the City of Paris, and Maurice Godquin, Officer Commissary of the Peace, have taken the evidence of M. Charles Ferdinand Barbe, 56 years of age, a resident of Nomeny (Meurthe-et-Moselle).

The witness states:

"After resigning my position in the Prefecture of Police, in which I had served during a period of twenty-seven years, as a police officer, I retired in July, 1906, to Nomeny (Meurthe-et-Moselle) my native place. On the 2nd August, 1914, on the eve of the declaration of war, two German Uhlans crossed the frontier at about nine o'clock in the morning and came to Nomeny, which

is about five kilometres distant from the frontier. These two soldiers had undoubtedly lived in our neighbourhood, for they greeted, by their names, a native of Nomeny and a native of Abaucourt. 'Good-day, Nonon,' they called to the first, and 'Good-day, Toussaint,' to the second.

"They went back almost immediately, but returned a little later with five other cavalrymen, one of whom was a lieutenant. They made for the police station. There were three policemen in the courtyard, engaged in grooming their horses: the Uhlans had no difficulty in making prisoners of these men, surprised without their arms. The sergeant, who was not in the courtyard at the time, succeeded in escaping. The Uhlans led away their three prisoners.

"Between the 14th and 15th August, patrols of French and German cavalry passed almost every day through Nomeny, the French coming from the direction of Nancy, and the Germans from Metz. Some slight engagements took place between these patrols, either at Nomeny or in the neighbourhood. Some of the Germans were killed in these skirmishes; amongst others, I saw an officer of Uhlans who had been killed.

"But no acts of violence against the Germans were committed by any of the inhabitants of Nomeny; the only people left in the village were old men, women, and children: it would have been madness on our part to incur the risk of reprisals. Nor did the Germans ever

complain of any attack on our part. On several occasions they came foraging in the village, and we always gave them what they asked for.

"At first they used to pay for what they took, but after a while they only gave us receipts, saying that we must get payment as best we could.

"From the 15th to the 20th August, Nomeny was the centre of military operations. Several German shells fell in the village, although there were no French troops there. More than once we were compelled to seek refuge in the cellars, because several of the inhabitants had been killed or wounded by the bursting shells. As soon as the bombardment ceased, we came out of the cellars and went on with our work. After the 20th August, the surviving inhabitants continued to live in their cellars without food. If any of them went out to seek provisions, the German soldiers killed them, shooting them in the street. Whether by night or by day those who ventured out were fired upon.

"But even before the 20th of August, the German soldiers had already begun to put peaceful civilians to death in Nomeny and the surrounding country. I may mention, for instance, the case of postman Cotal, who, crossing the street in his shirt sleeves, was pursued by Uhlans. Just as he was taking refuge in the Post-office, near the Town Hall, he was killed by a rifle shot. I might also mention that before the 20th August, the son of M. Raymond was killed while at work in his field;

also Nicholas Colson, a retired butcher; a man named George, butcher's assistant; a farm lad, 15 years of age called Michael, who was killed in the courtyard of the farm, accused of having spoken evil of the Prussians.

"But after the 20th of August, arson and looting became matters of everyday occurrence, no doubt, because the French patrols had retired. On the 20th, at about six o'clock in the morning, some German infantry of the 4th Regiment, preceded by cavalry, came to Nomeny. Without a word of warning, they set fire to the Café Bellevue, using rockets for the purpose. In the same way they set fire to the farm belonging to M. Lamy; on leaving this farm they took away with them about thirty head of cattle and a dozen horses, which they took to Metz. On the 20th August and during the following day, they proceeded methodically to burn the village and the neighbouring farms, house by house. They compelled the Mayor of the place to accompany them in these acts of brigandage. The German soldiers were led by non-commissioned officers. Their officers did not show themselves, but it is certain that the men were only acting under their orders. They were standing close to the Café Bellevue when it was burned. All the farms in the neighbourhood of Nomeny were burnt after the cattle had been taken away.

"M. Charvin, a Municipal Councillor, was acting as Mayor (the Mayor, M. Rose, an officer of the Reserve, having joined his regiment). After compelling M.

Charvin to accompany them while they burned and looted the houses of his district, the German soldiers killed him, shooting him just as he was entering his residence.

"It should be observed that the Germans killed the inhabitants of Nomeny and burned their houses without ever having formulated a complaint of any sort against them, and without ever having uttered a threat or a warning, or being provoked in any way. They proceeded as if they were acting under orders, and as a matter of regular duty, in cold blood. From the 5th to the 20th August the Commune of Nomeny had supplied them with all the provisions they had asked for, and frequently without payment of any sort.

"A number of the inhabitants were killed in the streets; some inside their houses, some in the fields, and some in their beds. For the most part the victims were old men, women, and children. Speaking from personal recollection I am able to give the names of several people murdered in this way:

"Meunier, retired butcher, 50 years of age; Raymond, senior, 55 years of age, day-labourer; Schneider, draper, 40 years of age; Charvin, 50 years of age, acting Mayor; Humbert, 60 years of age, Notary (his wife and daughter are grievously wounded); Killian, 70 years of age, day-labourer; Forgelet, 72 years of age, shepherd of the Commune.

"After killing Forgelet, his murderers decapitated

him on the spot. The shepherd who took Forgelet's place was killed on the following day, and the village flock (500 to 600 sheep) was carried off by the Germans.

"Cahen, 45 years of age, cattle dealer; Madame Cousin, 56 years of age, of independent means; Vincent, 57 years of age, drayman. Kieffert, 36 years of age, licensed victualler; (his wife[1] and son, 16 years of age, were killed with him.) Ménétrez, 55 years of age, day-labourer; Guillaume, 58 years of age, lawyer's clerk; Vassé, 18 years of age, day-labourer. (Madame Cousin after being killed, was thrown by the German soldiers into the midst of a burning house, where her body was burned to ashes.)

"I may also mention the case of Jean-Pierre Adam who was thrown alive into the fire by the German soldiers; as he did not burn quickly enough to please them they finished him off with rifle shots.

"Another man named Conrart, 72 years of age, bed-ridden for 7 or 8 years, was killed in his bed by the German soldiers. I have omitted certain other cases, such as that of M. and Madame Gourcier, farmers of Laborde, who were killed in their home, and many others, whose names escape me.

"Near the station I saw in front of the Café Français, which was kept by M. Paul Marcus, some German soldiers who fired at all the passersby; they killed a

[1] This is an error. Mme. Kieffert, though wounded, has survived.

child, to me unknown, which could not have been more than 2 years of age. I saw this child, clad in a red and white striped dress; it fell stone dead. I also saw a woman 60 years of age killed in her garden, an invalid who had come out to get a little fresh air.

"On the 21st August, I was hiding in a cellar with about fifteen other survivors of Nomeny, when the Germans came and found us, and led us out on to the new road. They put us on a small hill, so that the French artillery should not trouble them any more. I met there several other survivors of Nomeny who had been there since the previous evening and had slept on the bare ground. We lay altogether in the garden, scarcely clad, and without any shelter whatsoever, so as to serve as a protecting screen for the Germans encamped on the Araucourt Road. Some German officials mounted guard over us near a large bonfire.

"I estimate that, out of thirteen hundred inhabitants, at Nomeny, at least 150 were killed by the Germans. Only two houses were left standing."

Read to, and signed by, Barbe, in the presence of the Police Commissary of the District, X. Guichard, and of M. Godquin, Police Commissary, whose signatures are attached.

The above statement has been confirmed and signed by M. Nicholas Roger, farmer, 58 years of age, a resident of Nomeny, whose signature is witnessed by the above-mentioned Police Officers.

No. 82

DEPOSITION of M. Georges Munier.

Thursday, August 27, 1914.

On the 26th August, 1914, I, the undersigned, Louis Planson, Commissary of Police of the City of Paris, specially affected to the Vivienne quarter, Officer in the judicial branch of the Police, serving under the Public Prosecutor, acting under instructions of the Divisional Commissary of the second district, interviewed M. Georges Munier, 19 years of age (formerly a pupil in the school at Châlons, temporarily domiciled in the house of M. Benoit, No. 15 Avenue d'Allemagne), who made the following statement:

"The Germans first entered Nomeny on the 20th August. The population had taken refuge in the cellars. I was with my family. Hearing some soldiers passing, we asked through one of the ventilators what was happening, and were told that a soldier was knocking at the doors to make everybody come out, as the houses were going to be burnt.

"We came out into the street. A little farther on a detachment of infantry appeared in command of an officer who summoned my father to him. My father offered no provocation of any kind, but the officer made a sign to one of his men, who shot him point blank; my father was killed outright on the spot; his waistcoat was scorched by the shot.

"Five hundred yards farther on we took refuge in the

house of M. Bousse, ex-grocer, after having been fired at several times on the way.

"The Mayor, M. Charvin, was there. Shortly afterwards, hearing the bell ring, M. Charvin showed himself on the threshold and was immediately shot. I witnessed these things myself; I have also heard that two whole families were massacred, viz., the Schneiders and the Prévots.

"These massacres had all the appearance of being regularly organized. The Germans proceeded as follows:

"First, they forbade anyone from going into the streets on any pretext whatsoever. Then, when all the inhabitants had taken refuge in their cellars, they set fire to the houses. Those who had taken refuge were thus compelled to come out again, when they were shot at sight."

Read over and signed:
G. MUNIER.

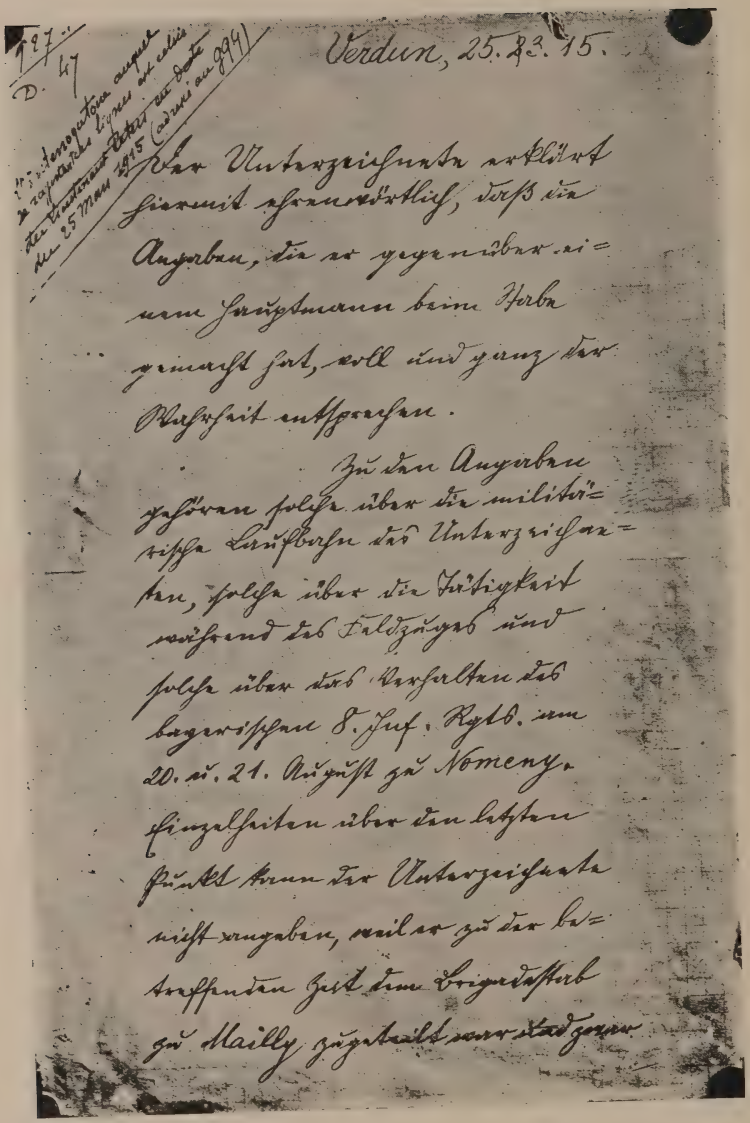
(*Signed*) PLANSON,
Commissary of Police.

No. 83

DEPOSITION of Lieutenant Wilhelm Peters, of the 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 33d Reserve Division.

VERDUN, 25, 3, 15.

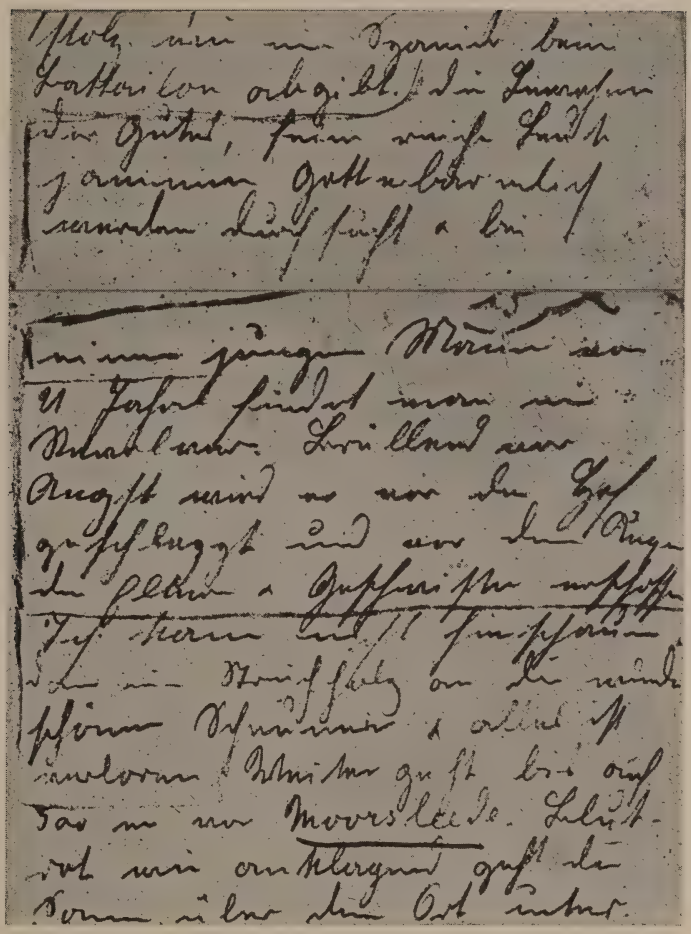
Der Unterzeichnete erklärt hiermit ehrenwörtlich, dass die Angaben, die er gegenüber einem Hauptmann beim Stabe gemacht hat, wohl und ganz der Wahrheit entsprechen.



Verdun, 25.23.15.

Der Unterzeichnete erklärt hiermit ehrenwörtlich, daß die Angaben, die er gegenüber einem Zeugsmann beim Herbe gemacht hat, voll und ganz der Wahrheit entsprechen.

Zu den Angaben gehören solche über die militärischen Einrichtungen des Unterzeichneten, solche über die Tätigkeit während des Feldzuges und solche über das Verhalten des bayerischen 8. Inf. Regts. am 20. u. 21. August zu Nomeny. Einzelheiten über den letzten Punkt kann der Unterzeichnete nicht angeben, weil er zu der betreffenden Zeit dem Brigadestab zu Mailly zugeteilt war und ganz



No. 83

Zu den Angaben gehören solche über die militärische Laufbahn des Unterzeichneten, solche über die Tätigkeit während des Feldzuges und solche über das Verhalten des bayerischen 8. Inf. Rgts. am 20. u. 21. August zu Nomeny.

Einzelheiten über den letzten Punkt kann der Unterzeichnete nicht angeben, weil er zu der betreffenden Zeit dem Brigadestab zu Mailly zugeteilt war und zwar als Melderadfahrer (Unter-offizier).

Immerhin hatte er bei seinen Fahrten Gelegenheit, sich davon zu überzeugen dass von mehreren Soldaten, die sich von ihrer Kompagnie entfernt hatten, Rohheiten ausgeführt wurden.

Zum Beispiel war er Augenzeuge folgender Tat eines einzelnen bayerischen Soldaten, dessen Namen er in der Eile und bei dem Durcheinander leider nicht feststellen konnte: dieser unglaublich rohe Mensch erschoss einen Familienvater vor den Augen seiner Frau u. seines Kindes.

Ich hatte hierbei, wie bei andern Vorkommnissen den Eindruck, dass es den in Nomeny anwesenden Offizieren unmöglich war, Derartiges zu verhindern.— Soviel ich darüber urteilen kann, sind die begangenen Schandtaten, deren Folgen fast alle später anwesenden Soldaten mit Abscheu erfüllten, abnormen Rohlingen zuzuschreiben.

Wilhelm Peters,
Lt. d. Res. im bayer. 8. I. R.

The undersigned declares on his honour that the statements made by him before a Captain of the Staff are absolutely and entirely true.

Of these statements some deal with the military career of the undersigned, some with his activities during the campaign, and others with the conduct of the 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry at Nomeny on August the 20th and 21st.

The undersigned can give no details of this last matter, because on the dates in question he was serving on the Staff of the Brigade at Mailly as a cyclist despatch-rider (non-commissioned officer).

Nevertheless, in the course of his journeys, he had opportunities of seeing that brutalities had been perpetrated by various soldiers who had strayed from their company.

For instance, he witnessed the following act of a Bavarian soldier, whose name he was unfortunately unable to learn in the haste and confusion: this man shot the father of a family with incredible brutality in the presence of his wife and child.

It was my impression then and on other occasions, that the officers at Nomeny were unable to prevent such acts. As far as I could judge, the crimes committed, which filled all the soldiers who came to Nomeny later with horror, must be attributed to abnormal brutes.

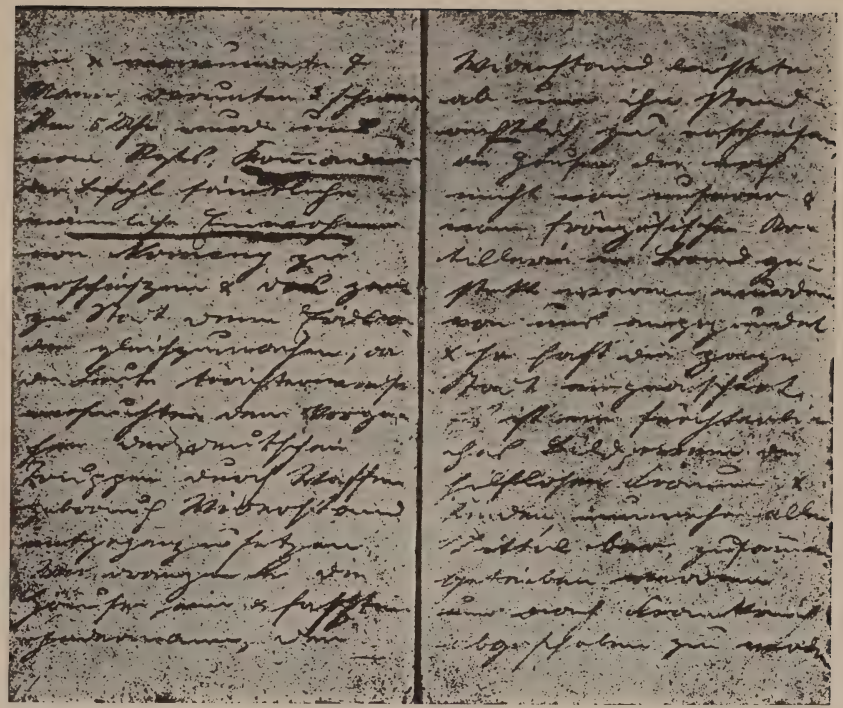
(*Signed*) WILHELM PETERS,
Lieutenant 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry (Reserve).

No. 84

EXTRACT from the note-book of Private Fischer, 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 33d Reserve Division.

"Eine Granate schlug in der Nähe der 11. Kompagnie ein und verwundete 7 Mann, darunter 3 schwer. Um 5 Uhr wurde uns von Regts. Kommandeur der Befehl sämmtliche männliche Einwohner von Nomeny zu erschiessen und die ganze Stadt dem Erdboden gleichzumachen, da die Leute törichterweise versuchten dem Vorgehen der deutschen Truppen durch Waffengebrauch Widerstand entgegenzusetzen. Wir drangen in die Häuser ein und fassten jedermann, der Widerstand leistete, ab, um ihn standrechtlich zu erschiessen. Die Häuser, die noch nicht bon unserer und von der granzösischen Artillerie in Brand gesteckt waren, wurden von uns angezündet, und so fast die ganze Stadt eingeäschert. Es ist ein fürchterliches Bild, wenn die hilflosen Frauen und Kinder, nunmehr, aller Mittel bar, zusammengetrieben werden, um nach Frankreich abgeschoben zu werden."

"A shell burst near the 11th Company, and wounded seven men, three very severely. At 5 o'clock we were ordered by the officer in command of the regiment to shoot all the male inhabitants of Nomeny, because the population was foolishly attempting to stay the advance



No. 84

of the German troops by force of arms. We broke into the houses, and seized all who resisted, in order to execute them according to martial law. The houses which had not been already destroyed by the French artillery and our own were set on fire by us, so that nearly the whole town was reduced to ashes. It is a terrible sight when helpless women and children, utterly destitute, are herded together and driven into France."

CHAPTER V

VIOLATIONS OF THE GENEVA CONVENTION

THE UNDERTAKING GIVEN BY GERMANY

MOBILE Field Ambulances (that is to say those which are intended to follow the armies in the field) and the fixed establishments of the Army Medical Service shall be respected and protected by the belligerents.

The staff exclusively employed in collecting, carrying, and attending to the wounded and the sick, as well as those employed in the administration of field stations and hospitals, and the chaplains attached to the armies, shall under all circumstances be respected and protected; if they fall into the hands of the enemy, they shall not be treated as prisoners of war.

(Articles 6 and 9 of the Geneva Convention, renewed on July 6, 1906.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

No. 85

REPORT by Assistant-Surgeon Mozer, of the Reserve, 161st Regiment of Infantry, addressed

to Surgeon-Major Cadiot of the same regiment, describing the circumstances under which he was wounded by a German officer.

BERCK-PLAGE, *November* 26, 1914.

I have the honour to bring to your knowledge the circumstances under which I was wounded, on the 22d August, at Mercy-le-Haut.

Having left you that morning at the Town Hall of Mercy-le-Haut, where we had just seen the German wounded, I proceeded with M. L'Hommel, to rejoin the stretcher-bearers of the 1st Battalion. From them we learned that several French wounded had been without medical relief since the previous evening at Mercy-le-Bas. I proceeded thither on my bicycle, and having attended to them, came back to Mercy-le-Haut. I was next called to see an artillery officer, who had just been wounded. I proceeded to the house in which he had been placed, and there learned that he had already been seen by a doctor of the 161st. At this moment the fight was raging. I did several dressings in the streets of the village, and, having no means of transport at my disposal, placed the severely wounded cases in various houses of Mercy-le-Haut.

The regiment retreated, and the village was subjected to gunfire from one side whilst its streets were enfiladed by the enemy's musketry. I tried to get away on my bicycle, but after going a few yards, was thrown to the

ground. My back tire had been struck and my front wheel injured by a bullet. Suffering greatly from my fractured foot, on which I had fallen, it would have been impossible for me to go far, and I realized that I could not hope to rejoin my regiment; I decided therefore to return to the house in the village. I found there M. L'Hommel, with a number of medical orderlies and stretcher-bearers, attending to the wounded. A shell falling upon the Town Hall compelled us to bring down the French wounded from the first storey.

When the bombardment was over, I proceeded to search for the wounded with the help of two stretcher-bearers. Between two trips, I heard that a wounded officer, who had sought refuge in a house in the village, was asking for medical aid. I went thither, and found Capt. de La Laurencie. Just as I was about to dress his wound, the Germans came upon the scene. It was just growing dusk when the house in which we were was invaded by a patrol. The officer in command disarmed Capt. de La Laurencie. After questioning me, and learning that I belonged to the Medical Staff, he left me my revolver.

Having dressed Capt. de La Laurencie's wound, I went out to continue my search for the wounded; but first of all, I went to try and find a lantern in an adjoining house.

Accompanied by Corporal Deshayes and three stretcher-bearers, I set out first from the village of

Mercy-le-Haut, a few paces in front of them. Hardly had we left the house, when we were seen by a German patrol, which, without challenging us, opened fire, but no one was hit. I called out to my men, "Go back." As for me, I went forward rapidly a few paces and then lay down behind a carriage from which position I endeavoured to explain to them in German that I belonged to the Medical Staff. They replied in French, "Come here." I did so, and they began to question me as to the capacity in which I was acting and that of my followers. I then asked them if I could look after our wounded, to which they replied that they would take me to their captain, in command of the post. I found this officer in a courtyard dimly lighted by a light coming from an adjoining room, of which the door was open. In this room shortly before, I had placed two men, wounded in the chest. These men were lying on mattresses and witnessed the scene which I am about to describe.

I was again questioned by the officer, and then searched. Nearly everything on my person was taken from me, including probably a pocket-book containing bank notes and a list of the wounded I had attended during the day, for I could not find this pocket-book afterwards. Seeing my revolver-case, the officer opened it, took out the revolver, and complained of my carrying arms. I explained to him why we carry weapons, and added that the Geneva Convention authorizes us

to do so. Declining to hear my explanation he made me pass in front of him, and take my stand in the recess of the doorway. Standing on my left side, he held my revolver pressed against my temple; I believed that he was simply trying to test me, and my chief object at the time was to remain quite cool. He pulled the trigger, but the safety catch was down and I heard several times the click made by the cylinder revolving on its axis. I then tried to turn round towards him so as to tell him that the joke had gone far enough, but at that moment something, I do not know what, perhaps a new sort of noise, warned me that he was about to shoot. I turned my head quickly to the right just as the revolver went off, and the bullet hit me on a level with the left mastoid process, coming out towards the right eye.

Without losing consciousness I fell down. I was suffering acutely, and overcome with such extreme vertigo that I was unable to get up and remained lying there on my left side. After a few minutes I tried to raise myself, but was unable to do so. I moved enough, however, to enable me to see the German officer with the revolver still pointed at me. He threatened to shoot me if I moved. At this moment I perceived that a discussion was taking place in German between him and a new arrival. I was fully expecting another bullet when, to my surprise, I heard these words spoken, "Are you suffering very much? What they have done

to you is infamous." It was a German officer, who with his revolver in his hand, thus addressed me. He lifted me up and had me taken to the house from which I had come, where my wound was dressed by Corporal Deshayes.

It seemed to me, at the close of this scene, that the first officer was about to finish me off when the second prevented him by threatening him with his revolver. This is nothing more than a simple deduction which I draw from observation of the facts as I perceived them.

I was in such a state of collapse and suffering moreover from dislocation of the jaw, that, believing myself to be mortally wounded, I did not endeavour to question this latter officer, who might possibly have been willing to testify on my behalf and supply me with the name of the assassin.

I was subsequently carried to Fontoy and later to Metz, and I desire particularly to inform you that, during the time that I spent in the German hospitals, I have nothing but praise to give to the attitude and courtesy of their staff towards the French wounded.

After remaining a fortnight in the German lines, I was brought back in a motor car to within a few miles of the French advance posts. That evening, I was brought to the Gama hospital at Toul, from which, a fortnight later, I left for Berck on convalescent leave.

(*Signed*) M. Mozer.

Assistant-Surgeon of the 161st Regiment of Infantry, now at the Naval Hospital of Berck-Plage.

No. 86

REPORT forwarded by Police Lieutenant Tuaillon, in command of the district of Pontarlier, having reference to the cruelties inflicted at Recquignies on ten French hospital orderlies.

The following statement has been made by Dr. Delfosse, Assistant-Surgeon of the 1st Class, Dr. Benninson, Assistant-Surgeon of the 1st Class, and Dr. Crépi, Supernumerary-Surgeon:

"On the 6th September, 1914, the field hospital of the first territorial regiment of infantry was located at Recquignies (entrenched camp of Maubeuge) when it was captured by the Germans. They took a corporal and nine hospital assistants to Boussois, to help them in carrying their wounded, and on their return to Recquignies compelled them, under pain of death, to set fire to the houses of the doctor and the Mayor of the place, which was done by putting straw under the beds and lighting it.

"This done, as the Germans had to make their way along a level road, exposed to the flank fire of French machine guns, they compelled these hospital assistants to line up along the road in such a manner as to conceal their own movements. In the course of this dastardly manœuvre, three of the hospital assistants were seriously wounded. A fourth, having offered some resistance to the orders of the Germans, was nearly killed

by them with the butt-ends of their rifles. The unfortunate man was still spitting blood at the time when the doctors were able to leave their place of captivity."

(*Signed*) TUAILLON.

No. 87

REPORT forwarded by 2d Class Surgeon-Major Rigaux, in charge of the Medical Staff of the Composite Regiment (5th Army, 1st Army Corps), having reference to the bombardment of a regimental first-aid post, stationed at the farm of La Pêcherie.

FIRST-AID POST, *December* 9, 1914.

The farm of La Pêcherie is situated in the Department of the Aisne, in the canton of Neufchâtel; it is a dependency of the Commune of Pontavert, and distant from it about two kilometres. Standing by itself in the plain, it was used as a regimental first-aid post under the Red Cross. Strict orders had been issued in the neighbourhood of the farm that no one carrying weapons was to be allowed to enter it, and a notice to that effect was posted on the door.

From and after the middle of October, shells fell occasionally round and about the farm; in one or two cases they even struck the courtyard or the outhouses. After the bombardment of the 27th November, acting on the advice of the general commanding the 2d Division, the Red Cross pennons, which, it seems, had been

scarcely visible on the front of the house and on the roofs, were replaced by two large flags, two yards by three, mounted upon flagstaffs eight yards high. From that date forward, shells fell without ceasing. After some firing from the direction of La Miette, which sent shells right into the courtyard of the farm (evidently trial shots), we were treated every morning from nine o'clock till noon, to a systematic bombardment, with the range evidently established, commencing at the outskirts of the farm and ending on the buildings. Seventeen of our people were wounded.

30th November. A shrapnel shell, striking sideways on the inner side of the cattle-shed roof, sent several splinters into the ward, where four men were wounded, one seriously.

3d December. A shell fell on the cattle-shed next to the sick ward, and there were six casualties.

4th December. A shell fell in the courtyard, at the south-east inner angle of the buildings therein situated. There were seven casualties, of whom six (four stretcher-bearers and two patients) were badly wounded, the seventh case was not serious.

5th December. A few shells round the farm.

6th December. A shell on the corner of the barn, at the south-east angle of the courtyard, another on the manure heap, and a third in the stable; considerable damage done to the buildings; three shrapnel shells burst over the farm.

7th December. A regular and systematic bombardment. About fifty shells fell on the buildings and all around the farm.

At the commencement of these bombardments, it was only the last shell which reached us, after which all was quiet. Later on it was the one before the last, the last one going over the farm; but speaking generally, every projectile reached its object, either grazing the roofs, and leaving the marks of their passage thereon before falling close to the farm, or exploding in the immediate vicinity, as if their intention were to prevent us from escaping. These were all large calibre shells (150).

The farm was evacuated on the night of the 4th of December.

(*Signed*) Dr. Rigaux,
Surgeon-Major.

OPINION of the Colonel commanding the 4th Brigade:

I make no statement without proofs; up to the 27th November, inclusive, I should not have been prepared to state definitely that the ambulance was the target at which they were aiming, but since the 28th I have had no longer any doubts upon the subject. I hope to be able to forward a photograph shortly.

(*Signed*) Lévi.

December 9, 1914.

No. 88

STATEMENT by Sub-Lieutenant Desforges, of the 151st Regiment of Infantry, describing the cruel treatment inflicted on wounded men under the Red Cross flag.

At ten o'clock in the morning of the 22d February, 1915, I, the undersigned, Jules Manouvrier, special assistant Commissary attached to the Military Government of Paris, Inspector of Judicial Police in the Department of the Public Prosecutor,

Acting by virtue of the appended letter, dated 14th February, 1915, from the Minister of War, forwarded to me as my instructions by the Military Governor of Paris,

Took down the evidence of M. Jean Desforges, 22 years of age, a Sub-Lieutenant in the 151st Regiment of Infantry, on sick leave at the home of his parents in Paris, No. 4 Avenue de l'Opéra. He, having taken before me the usual oath to tell the whole truth, made the following declaration:

"I was wounded by a splinter of shell on the forehead on the 22d August, 1914, at about seven o'clock in the evening at a place called Meix, before Virton, in Belgium. I was carried to the house of some Belgian peasants not far from the spot known as Oudrigny. Other wounded men had already been carried thither.

"Between five and six o'clock in the morning of the following day, a hay-cart, drawn by one horse, was brought to take the wounded back to the French lines. We had got into it as best we could, and the waggon was

still standing in front of the house where we had passed the night, when a section of German infantry suddenly made its appearance from the ditch which ran alongside a road at right angles to that on which we were. The German lieutenant in command, catching sight of the waggon standing there and filled at the time with about ten wounded men, threw out his men in skirmishing order, ordered them to kneel, and indicated the cart as their target; he then made them get up and commanded them to fire two volleys. A Red Cross flag was flying over the cart.

"After he had ordered them to cease firing, he came up and had the wounded men roughly turned out of the cart, after which he entered the house, which his men sacked and looted from top to bottom. Next, having had all the arms, ammunition, and goods taken from the house and from the persons of the wounded, he had them loaded on to the cart, and went away with his men and his booty. A few hours later, another conveyance was requisitioned which brought us to the French lines."

Read to the witness, confirmed by him, and signed.

JEAN DESFORGES.

With reference to which facts I have drawn up this report to be forwarded to the General of Division, Military Governor of Paris.

(*Signed*) MANOUVRIER.
Special Assistant Commissary.

No. 89

DESPATCH from the Minister of War to the Minister for Foreign Affairs.

BORDEAUX, *January* 15, 1915.

Under date the 29th December last, I had the honour to forward to you, at your request, a copy of an official report by Dr. Simonin, Chief Surgeon of the 1st Class, Assistant Director of the Army Medical Service of the 10th District, having reference to the circumstances which led to the murder of M. Deschars, French Consul and military interpreter, by a German non-commissioned officer at Goméry, in Belgium.

I hasten to acquaint you with the results of the investigation which I have caused to be made into this abominable violation of international law.[1]

On the 22d August, after the battle of Ethe (in Belgium), some 300 wounded men had been collected and brought to the Château de Goméry, the property of Baron de Gerlache, where they were placed in an ambulance under the protection of the Red Cross, whose flag was flying at the entrance gate, and over the pediment of the house.

Dr. Dutheil, assistant surgeon of the 14th Regiment of Hussars, had established his regimental aid post there with the help of Assistant Surgeon Pierquin, of

[1] The following details are taken from the several statements appended to this despatch.

the 101st Regiment of Infantry, and of Medical Student Duflos of the 102d Regiment. Furthermore, Chief Surgeon Simonin, who had been wounded the same day in the course of the engagement by a bullet which had pierced his knee, had had himself carried thither, and from the hall where he lay, supervised and directed the service of the ambulance. At the same time, Surgeon-Major Sédillot, of the 26th Regiment of Artillery, had taken up his quarters in the village itself, with Assistant Surgeon de Charette and several hospital assistants of the same regiment.

At nine o'clock in the evening of the 22d August, the first patrol of Uhlans made its appearance at the gate. The officer in command parleyed with Surgeon-Major Dutheil and Mademoiselle Raphaëlle de Gerlache. He retired, however, without making any demands, other than that a lamp should be placed beside the pennon of the Red Cross at the entrance gate.

About an hour later some firing was heard, not very far from the house.

At half-past ten, a second Uhlan patrol appeared at the gate, led by an officer who, in bad French and with a brutally arrogant manner, declared that his men had been fired upon from the village and that the shots came from a house flying the Red Cross flag. He refused, nevertheless, to enter the château and satisfy himself that it contained no weapons, and threatened to have Dr. Dutheil and Dr. Duflos shot on the spot. By his

orders these gentlemen were roughly seized, thrown on the ground, and then led off to the village, with their hands tied, between Uhlans, who held revolvers to their heads.

After having passed through Goméry, they were brought to the village of Bleid, where there was a German ambulance. There they were courteously received by their German confrères, who, after making use of their services for a part of the night in dressing wounds, gave them a safe-conduct to return to Goméry, under the guard of four men. But, on their way, they fell in with another patrol, which, putting them in the midst of their horses, took them as far as Ethe. There the General, Count Solms, commanding the 5th Army Corps, gave them with his own hand a safe-conduct to Goméry; they arrived there finally at eleven o'clock in the morning, utterly worn out, having had nothing since the previous evening except a piece of bread and some water.

On the 23d August, at about midday, a German patrol, commanded by a young officer and consisting of soldiers of a regiment of Pomeranian Grenadiers, suddenly invaded the courtyard of the château. Without preliminary warning, and disregarding the flag of the Red Cross, these men fired a volley in the direction of the front of the building; a number of bullets came through the windows, but without wounding anyone. The château was then searched from top to bottom by

the threatening soldiers. The officer, revolver in hand, appeared before Dr. Simonin, the Chief Surgeon, and denied that he was a doctor, on the ground that the buttons of his uniform did not bear the head of Æsculapius. The explanations given did not satisfy him; by his order Dr. Simonin was placed upon a stretcher and taken off to Goméry between six armed men.

At the entrance to Goméry, Dr. Simonin saw the soldiers of the regiment to which this patrol belonged, methodically setting fire to the first houses of the village, whilst old men, women, and children were fleeing, with their cattle, under a hail of bullets.

At a distance of 1500 yards from the village, the stretcher was set down by the roadside for a few minutes, while the German went to look for his superior officer, to convey to him the protest of Dr. Simonin and to say that he claimed the acquaintance of Dr. von Coler, Inspector-General at the Ministry of War, at Berlin. In a little while the officer came back and ordered the two bearers to convey the doctor back to the château. With a military salute to the doctor, he said: "I am a student of the University of Bonn. I am not really brutal. I am sorry, . . . but it is war."

Thus Dr. Simonin was able to return to the castle and to resume charge of the ambulance.

During this painful excursion, the village had been the scene of the most horrible atrocities.

Shortly after daybreak on the 23d August, two patrols

of Uhlans had passed through Goméry without any disturbances. Later, a third arrived, led by a non-commissioned officer of the 47th Infantry Regiment, who appeared to be much excited and the worse for liquor. He proceeded to search the hospital, removing the bandages to make sure that no able-bodied men were being concealed.

On the first floor he found a number of wounded officers, and amongst them Interpreter-Lieutenant Deschars, whom he ordered to come down to the ground floor, where he was placed upon two chairs. The non-commissioned officer then went away with his men, but returned again in half an hour, more excited than ever, and complained to the Interpreter Officer that he had been fired upon. Then, without even giving him time to reply, he blew the lieutenant's brains out, point blank. Next he turned his weapon against Surgeon-Major Sédillot, who, fortunately, was able to deflect his aim a little and received the bullet in the shoulder. The doctor fled, and as he ran, two more shots struck him, one on the left arm and the other on the right thigh.

These shots were the signal for a general massacre: the men of the patrol began to fire upon the wounded, whilst the bearers and those patients who could walk, endeavoured to find shelter from the fusillade. On one side, Stretcher-bearer Bourgis was kneeling by the side of a wounded man, whose leg he was dressing under

the supervision of Dr. Vaissière. Both these men lay down flat on the ground, but a soldier came up and fired at them as they lay. Two shots were fired at the stretcher-bearer. The bullets merely grazed his ribs without inflicting wounds, but Assistant-Surgeon Vaissière was mortally wounded. Then there came other German soldiers, who threw lighted straw into the room. Bearer Bourgis got up, pulled the body of Dr. Vaissière from the burning straw, and then fled to the garden. As he lay hidden in the kitchen garden, he saw a lieutenant of the College of St. Cyr, whose leg had been amputated only that morning, jump from the first floor.

Twenty minutes later, Bearer Bourgis was discovered by three German soldiers, who made him get up, took him through the barn building, which was full of wounded and on fire throughout, and led him to the wall of the cemetery, where an execution squad was drawn up.

There he was compelled to witness a terrible spectacle: he saw a first group executed, amongst whom he recognized in particular one of his comrades, Stretcher-bearer Gresse. Afterwards he, too, was placed up against the wall with his arms above his head, beside the body of his friend, but he had sufficient presence of mind to throw himself on the ground, as soon as the order to fire was given by the non-commissioned officer in charge of the execution, so that he escaped with nothing worse

than a number of kicks and blows in the back from the rifle-butts of the soldiers of the firing party.

A few minutes later, attempting to escape, he was observed by two German soldiers, who, however, more humane than the rest, conducted him to the ambulance to have his wounds dressed by Dr. Dutheil.

Meanwhile, a number of other men, namely Stretcher-bearers Bellanger, Guion, Dabout, and Tessier, accompanied by a few wounded, had sought refuge in the cellar, where they were joined during the night by Dr. Sédillot. In spite of the heat and smoke, they remained there until noon of the following day, when they decided to come out. They were immediately recognized, seized, and led to the entrance of the cemetery, where, to their horror, they saw the bodies of about twenty soldiers who had been shot.

At this moment, Surgeon-Major de Charette, who had been wounded on the 22d August, came out from a neighbouring house, accompanied by three other wounded men. Surgeon-Major Sédillot was talking to him, when a German soldier came up and reported that a soldier had been wounded in the vicinity of the hospital. Upon this, the German officer informed Dr. de Charette that, if the guilty man were not produced forthwith, he and the men who were with him would be shot. In spite of his protestations, in which Dr. Sédillot joined, Dr. de Charette and his wounded companions were taken back into the house from which

they had come, and in a few minutes the sound of a volley told their comrades that a new crime had been perpetrated.

A little later a German officer came up to Dr. Sédillot, with a pocket-book and a letter in his hand, to inquire the address of Dr. de Charette. He withdrew after stating that the letter would be forwarded to that address and that the pocket-book would be restored to Dr. de Charette's family after the war. He expressed regret that Dr. de Charette's identity as a doctor had been recognized too late.

According to the evidence of those who witnessed this horrible tragedy at Goméry, the number of men, wounded and otherwise, who perished in the burning buildings cannot be reckoned at less than 300, whilst that of the soldiers who were shot in the cemetery was between 100 and 120.

As to Dr. Sédillot, and the lieutenant from St. Cyr, whose leg the doctor had amputated on the very morning before the hospital was burned, they were taken to a German ambulance in company with some other commissioned and non-commissioned officers, and thence conveyed to Germany.

Complete proof of these tragic events is furnished by the statements which have been put on record by Dr. Simonin, the chief surgeon, and by Stretcher-bearers Lucas, Guion, Bellanger, Bourgis, Tessier, and Dabout. The pretext put forward by the Germans to justify

these executions will not bear a moment's examination. For, even supposing (and the charge has never been proved) that some of the German patrols had been fired upon, this could only have been done by combatants, and certainly not by the patients or staff of the hospital who, as the first patrols had been able to ascertain, possessed no weapons.

Dr. Dutheil has not rejoined his corps since the 23d of August, being detained in Germany, in defiance of the very explicit rules laid down by international law.

I consider it to be my duty to forward, herewith, a copy of the several statements made by the witnesses examined during the course of this investigation.

You will, no doubt, concur in my opinion that it is advisable to draw the attention of the representatives of neutral countries to the facts thus clearly established and to appeal to the indignation of the civilized world against acts of this kind, which come not within the category of military operations, but are crimes against the common law.

Of the several sworn statements enclosed in this despatch, we reproduce only the two following:

A

STATEMENT by Stretcher-bearer Dabout.

Acting upon the instructions contained in the Ministry's despatch No. 3034/CP/10, of the 25th November, 1914, I have duly questioned 2d Gunner Dabout, stretcher-bearer

of the second battery, with reference to the facts stated in the said despatch, and have recorded his statement, as follows:

"On the morning of the 23d of August three detachments of German infantry arrived at Goméry. The first two gave us no trouble. The third, consisting of men of the 47th Regiment, entered the house in which Dr. Sédillot had established his dressing-station. At that moment I was in a room on the ground floor. Acting upon orders given by a non-commissioned officer in charge of this detachment, I helped to bring down from the first floor Interpreter-Officer Deschars, who was lying wounded on a stretcher. We placed him upon two chairs. After exchanging a few words with the lieutenant interpreter this non-commissioned officer shot him point-blank with a revolver, after which he turned the weapon against Dr. Sédillot; but the latter deflected the bullet by pushing his arm aside. He was struck, however, in the shoulder. Thereupon the soldiers began a regular fusillade, firing upon the wounded in the hospital.

"I made my escape at the back of the premises and sought refuge in the cellar, where I found the owner of the house and a number of hospital assistants and wounded men. Dr. Sédillot joined us there during the course of the night. I left the cellar with Dr. Sédillot and all those who had remained in it after the departure of Bellanger.

"No sooner were we outside upon the road than we were stopped by German soldiers, to whom we surrendered, drawing their attention to our Red Cross and the wounded men who were with us. They led us to the entrance of the cemetery; on our way thither we passed in front of the wall where the executions had taken place. I recognized, beyond all doubt, the body of Hospital Assistant Grunbert, belonging to the 2d Battery.

"On the evening of the 24th three German soldiers ordered me to follow them, and led me through the ruins of the village. They took me to a place where no one could see them, and then, pointing their rifles at me, gave me clearly to understand by gestures that it was a case of my money or my life. I gave them my purse and my wedding-ring. The latter was subsequently returned to me by a German non-commissioned officer, doubtless because the inscription engraved upon it might have got the thieves into trouble.

"I estimate that more than two hundred men perished in the flames and that about eighty were executed at the cemetery wall.

"We remained at the entrance of the cemetery, looking after the wounded, until we were transferred to the school; on the 30th we left for Arlon and thence were sent to Altengrabow."

(*Signed*) DABOUT.

In testimony whereof we have drawn up the present official report.

CHARTRES, 22d December, 1914.

(*Signed*) FLEURY.
Lieut.-Colonel in command of the dépôt of the 26th Artillery.

B

STATEMENT by Driver Tessier.

In pursuance of the instructions contained in the Ministry's despatch 3034/CP/10, of the 25th November, 1914, I have duly questioned 2d Driver Tessier with reference to the facts stated in the said despatch, and have recorded his statement, as follows:

"I arrived at Goméry at about 4 P.M. on the 22d August with the medical-supply wagon and Dr. Sédillot, who proceeded to arrange his dressing-station in the most comfortable house on the La Tour road, not very far from the cemetery. It was not long before men wounded in the fight at Ethe began to come in; the night passed off quietly, we being busy, dressing wounds.

"Two German patrols came along early on the morning of the 23d, but withdrew on recognizing that we were engaged on ambulance work, stating that they would respect the Red Cross.

"A third detachment arrived, led by a sergeant who spoke very loudly, and seemed excited and under the influence of liquor. He went all over the premises where the wounded were, and had their bandages taken

off to make quite sure that we were not concealing able-bodied men. He paid particular attention to the room on the first floor where the wounded officers were, amongst whom was the Interpreter-Officer Deschars. He ordered that this officer should be brought down, on his stretcher, into the room adjoining the entrance, and left there till further orders. Then he went off with his men, but in about half an hour came back, even more excited than before, and complained to the Interpreter that the German troops had been fired on in the neighbourhood; thereupon, without giving the Interpreter time to reply, he blew his brains out. Next he turned his weapon against Dr. Sédillot, who turned the shot aside by jerking his arm, but was wounded in the shoulder. Then, as the doctor was trying to escape, two more shots struck him, one on the left arm and the other on the right thigh. I proceeded to take refuge in the cellar, to which we were led by the owner of the house, and there we remained until about midday on the 24th.

"On coming out of this cellar we were taken prisoners, and led to the entrance of the cemetery, they left me with Dr. Sédillot, to help him to walk. Close to the cemetery wall I observed the bodies of about twenty soldiers who had been shot, amongst whom I recognized those of my comrades, Grunbert and Balassay, hospital assistants belonging to the first squad of the regiment.

"Soon after arriving at the cemetery we saw Dr. de

Charette (of the 3d Group of the 26th, who had been wounded on the 22d August) coming out of a house near the ambulance, followed by three French soldiers, wounded men. He stopped on the road opposite to the spot where we were. Dr. Sédillot went up to him and said, 'Poor Monsieur de Charette, so you have escaped?' and then they went on to talk awhile about the terrible events which they had witnessed.

"At this moment a German soldier came up to an officer, who was standing close to the road, and told him that one of his men had just been shot at and wounded in the vicinity of the hospital. This officer came up to M. de Charette and, giving him this information, declared that unless he denounced the guilty party, he and the men with him would be shot on the spot.

"M. de Charette gave his word of honour that none of the wounded had retained their weapons and that he could in no wise be held responsible for what had taken place. Dr. Sédillot made similar protestations, but all were of no avail. The officer had the doctor and his wounded men led back into the house from which they had come, and a few minutes later a volley told us of their execution.

"A little later they came again and took Dr. Sédillot. He and I were led away together, as well as a lieutenant from St. Cyr (whose foot had been amputated by the doctor, before the burning of the hospital, on the morning of the 23d August) and two wounded non-commis-

sioned officers of dragoons. We were brought to a place near the church, where we remained seated on a bench for about three quarters of an hour; then we left Goméry in a German ambulance, which took us to Allondrelles (France), where we arrived on the night of the 24th. There we were quartered in the school.

"While we were sitting on the bench outside the church at Goméry, a German officer, holding in his hand a pocket-book and a letter, came towards us. He asked Dr. Sédillot whether he knew the address of Dr. de Charette and handed him the envelope to verify it. He then went away, saying that the letter would be forwarded to its destination and that the pocket-book would be restored to the doctor's family after the war. He expressed regret that they had recognized too late the truth that M. de Charette was a doctor."

(*Signed*) TESSIER.

In testimony whereof I have drawn up the present official report.

CHARTRES, 22d December, 1914.

(*Signed*) FLEURY,
Lieut.-Colonel, commanding the dépôt of the 26th Artillery.

CHAPTER VI

USE OF FORBIDDEN BULLETS

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

THE contracting parties bind themselves mutually to refrain, in case of war between them, from allowing their troops on land or water to use any projectile of a weight of less than 400 grammes, which shall be either of an explosive nature or charged with fulminating or inflammable materials.

(Declaration at St. Petersburg, 11th December, 1868).

The contracting Powers agree to forbid the use of bullets which spread or flatten out easily in the human body, such as bullets with a hard outer envelope in which the casing does not entirely cover the inner core, or which bears incisions.

(Declaration at The Hague, 29th July, 1899.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

I. French Evidence

No. 90

DESPATCH from the Minister of War to the Minister of Foreign Affairs concerning the use of explosive bullets by the German troops.

BORDEAUX, *September* 20, 1914.

It appears from a communication dated the 9th September, emanating from M. Bapst, Minister for France at Copenhagen, as well as from a telegram sent on the 9th September by the Cabinet at Berlin to the American Ambassador in Paris, that the German General Staff has issued a public notification that, notwithstanding the provisions of the Geneva Convention, the German troops will henceforward make use of dum-dum bullets, because the French and English troops have been the first to do so. The German General Staff asserts, in fact, that packets of dum-dum bullets in large numbers have been found on French and English prisoners.

Moreover, the Emperor has telegraphed to President Wilson casting on his adversaries the entire responsibility for the cruel measures which Germany has been forced, he says, to adopt.

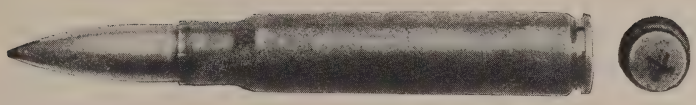
The French Government cannot allow such an accusation to pass without recording against it the strongest protest, on the lines already formulated in the letter which the President of the Republic has addressed to President Wilson.

This accusation is unsupported by any sort of proof; it is, on the contrary, refuted by a number of duly authenticated facts which, through your Department, have already been brought to the knowledge of the neutral powers. Of these the most important are as follows:

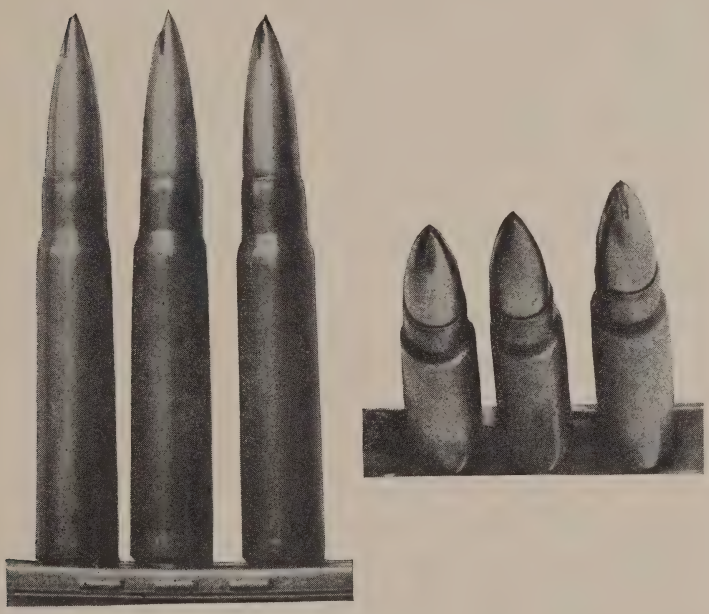
At the very outset of hostilities, precise and duly authenticated information was brought to the knowledge of the French Military Authorities, whereby the Germans were convicted of having violated the international conventions signed by the Imperial German Government. Thus, after an engagement, which took place on the 4th August, 1914, around the Châlet Hartmann, near the tunnel of Altenberg, at the neck of the Pass of Schlucht, our troops found on the ground, which had been held by the enemy, a certain number of cartridges in which the metal casing of the bullet had been nicked in such a way as to allow the leaden core to be visible at the point, and thus to produce a tendency to mushrooming of the leaden core on entering the body.

Subsequently, on the 9th of August, after an engagement which took place at the Pass of Louchpach, the Surgeon-Major of the 152d Infantry reported having to deal with wounds caused by "projectiles other than ordinary normal bullets of small calibre," and he forwarded with his report a cartridge-clip which had been found on the Munster Road, adjoining the Germans' Custom Station, containing cartridges loaded with bullets of a cylindro-conical shape with the ends cut, similar to those above mentioned.

Is it necessary to draw attention to the fact that the use of such bullets is formally forbidden by the declaration of The Hague?



(1) Cartridges found on the 25th and 26th August, 1914, on the field of battle at Réméréville and at Crévic, in clips carried by German soldiers and in the belts of their machine guns.



(2) Front and side views of a clip picked up on the 26th August on the field of battle near Étain by a non-commissioned officer of the 366th Infantry and handed over to Captain Bavière, of the staff of the 72d Division.

Wounds resulting from the use of dum-dum bullets have been observed upon other occasions, more especially at the 3d Ambulance of the 9th Army Corps in the case of men wounded on the 27th August at the battle of Rémérèville, and at the mixed hospital at Fontenay-le-Comte, in the case of a soldier wounded on the 22d August in the engagement at Meissin, near Bouillon, by a shot fired at a distance of about twenty yards.

On the 25th and 26th August, cartridges containing dum-dum bullets, the points of which had been cut with cross-shaped incisions, were found at various points of the field of battle at Rémérèville and in the neighbourhood of Crévic; these cartridges were found, not only in the clips carried by soldiers, but in the belts of their machine guns.

On the 9th August a German cavalry patrol of five men of the 8th Hussars, consisting of a non-commissioned officer and three men, led by Lieutenant Baron von Wittinghoff-Schell was surprised in a farm, at Villers-sur-Liesse (Belgium), by a French detachment. Of two revolvers which were found at the place where their capture was effected, one, which seemed to belong to the officer, was fitted with a clip which contained bullets on which cross-shaped incisions had been made, roughly enough, on the flattened part.

The General Commanding-in-Chief has forwarded a box of expanding bullets which was found in a limber

abandoned by the enemy in the wood of Mansuy, 5 kilometres to the south-east of Lunéville. (Forwarded on the 2d September.)

The chief surgeon in charge of the military wards of the hospital at Plombières has forwarded the photograph of a wound inflicted by one of these expanding bullets on a man of the 152d Regiment of Infantry, on the 2d August, at the Pass of Louchpach. The shot was fired by a sharpshooter of the 171st Regiment of German Infantry (from Colmar) from a distance of 50 or 60 yards.

Finally, in a telegram of the 1st September, the Governor of Dahomey reported that in the course of an engagement at Chra the Germans used dum-dum bullets and that on the person of a prisoner certain cartridges had been found containing projectiles of a nature forbidden by International Conventions. This last fact proves that the use of these projectiles is regular and general throughout the German army.

These facts, authenticated in a manner which leaves no room for doubt, are sufficient to prove conclusively that from and after the 4th August, that is to say, from the very beginning of hostilities, the German troops made use of bullets which by international agreements are forbidden as causing cruel and useless sufferings to the wounded.

The use of such bullets is, on the contrary, absolutely forbidden by the French military authorities. The

instructions issued for the guidance of our armies in the field reproduce, under this heading, the complete text of the International Conventions of Petrograd, of Geneva, and of The Hague, especially that of the 29th July, 1899. There is nothing to show that the rule thus laid down has ever been transgressed.

It would appear, from a publication which has recently taken place in a German newspaper, that the accusations made by the German Government may have been inspired by knowledge of the existence in France of a special type of cartridges, in which the bullet is hollowed out; these are used only by private rifle clubs with ranges of limited length. If this be so, it is sufficient to state that it is by no means impossible that samples of this kind of ammunition may have been found at Longwy and at Montmédy in the Ordnance Stores (and the information contained in the telegram of the 11th September from M. Beau having reference to the manner in which they were packed, would seem to indicate that this was the case). But this kind of ammunition is made by the Artillery Directorate, solely for the use of such clubs, and delivered only to them; it is never issued to the troops. Moreover, as the result of the hollowing out of the bullet, this cartridge has lost all its ballistic properties, and is thus rendered absolutely unfit for military purposes.

From all these considerations it is clear that no weight can be attached to the pretext which has been invoked

by the German Government in its attempt to justify at this date its use of dum-dum bullets, in the manner above described (apart from the fact that they have been habitually used by its troops since the beginning of the war).

The French Government is compelled to expose this insolent defiance of truth and justice and to call down upon it the indignation of the civilized world.

(*Signed*) A. MILLERAND.

No. 91

REPORT by Lieutenant-Col. Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, on the cartridges submitted to him for examination on the 20th of August.

PARIS, *August* 20, 1914.

The cartridges forwarded have nothing to indicate the place of their origin; they were evidently made without marks. But they fit the German rifle chamber, and as regards the length of the bullet exposed and its leaden core, they are identical with that of the German cartridge of the model of 1888. With the exception of the portion of the bullet protruding from the casing they fit exactly in size and shape over an outline of this cartridge taken at the end of 1894. They seem to have been made about ten years ago. They are not exactly dum-dum cartridges of the kind made in India

by the English, *i. e.* a bullet in which the exposed end of the leaden core is cut with longitudinal incisions near the top of the casing ("express solid nose split"). They are "soft nose solid" bullets, with the core exposed over a length of 4 mm. and a flattened surface of 5 mm., calculated to produce a mushrooming of the bullet on entering the body.

The result of this expansion is to increase the surface of the wound immediately after penetrating the body,

Cartridge with core of bullet exposed

extending it over a wider area of nerves, arteries, and veins; its general effect is also to stop the bullet in the neighbourhood of the place where it strikes, so long as it meets with a certain thickness of tissue, or resistance of the kind offered by the larger bones, and to produce by its mushrooming tendency, a great destruction of the muscular tissues. Fired at a short distance, these bullets have all the effect of an explosion on meeting with the resistance of a bone. They are generally used in sporting rifles, made on the model of military rifles, for the shooting of big game.

There is no doubt whatsoever that these bullets are forbidden by the rules of international war. We find,

in fact, in the international agreement signed at The Hague on the 29th July, 1899, under the heading "Declaration having reference to the prohibition of the use of bullets which spread or flatten easily in the human body, etc.," the following: "The contracting Powers agree to forbid the use of bullets which spread or flatten out easily in the human body, *such as bullets with a hard casing in which the casing does not entirely cover the inner core, or which bears incisions.*"

(*Signed*) V. LELEU,
Lieut.-Col., Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery.

No. 92

REPORT by Lieutenant-Colonel Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, on a cartridge submitted to him for examination by order of the Ministry of War on the 5th September, 1914.

PARIS, *7th September*, 1914.

The cartridge submitted is a German regulation cartridge with an S bullet fixed in a case manufactured at Spandau on the 3d August, 1909. The incisions must have been made on the bullet after the cartridge had been turned out complete. They consist of two lines, cut with a saw, of about 0.5 mm. cut crossways on the point to a depth of 6 mm.

For purposes of examination, the casing of the bullet

was taken off, so as to ascertain whether the leaden core was the ordinary normal core, which had been cut at the same time as the outer casing; this proved to be the fact.

This bullet is therefore not exactly a dum-dum bullet of the kind which, the type once fixed, the Calcutta factory used to turn out, that is to say, a bullet in which the exposed end of the leaden core is cut with longitudinal incisions, starting from the upper edge of the casing. As in the case of the first English cartridges used in the Chitral campaign, the manipulation of the bullet has taken place after manufacture, but it has nevertheless been carried out by a workman having access to a vice and a metal-saw. The operation must therefore have been carried out systematically for a considerable quantity of ammunition. The ballistic quality of bullets cut in this manner without any modification of the inner core must be precisely the same as that of the ordinary S bullets, so long as they do not meet with any obstacle. But if they ricochet against a hard object, these bullets, owing to the tendency of their points to lose their shape readily, are liable to develop considerable lateral deviations, and therefore reduce the chances of thoroughly sweeping the ground in the case of a badly regulated long-range fire.

As regards their special killing powers, these bullets cannot be included under the same heading as bullets which mushroom, for the reason that their core is not exposed at the point. In using them, one of three

things may happen: (1) either the bullet meets with a resisting bone, and, its four wings expanding crosswise, makes a sort of little windmill with four sails, which acts upon the portions penetrated with a corkscrew movement, from the point at which the expansion of the bullet occurs; or (2) if the bullet penetrates thick muscle, it is very possible that the inner core may be expelled from the casing, which it would spread out, and thus make two projectiles with independent and irregular movements; or (3) it is possible that in passing through thin or soft portions of the body, a bullet with its point cross-cut might behave just like an ordinary bullet.[1]

Be this as it may, there is no doubt whatsoever that these bullets are forbidden by the rules of international law. They are proscribed by virtue of that article of the Declaration made at The Hague on the 29th July, 1899, which lays down that "the contracting Powers agree to forbid the use of bullets which spread or flatten out easily in the human body, such as bullets with a hard casing in which the casing does not entirely cover the inner core, or which bears incisions."

(*Signed*) V. Leleu,
Lieut.-Col., Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery.

[1] So far as the knowledge of the editor goes, no experiments have been made with bullets thus treated. Those conducted by Surgeon-General Bruns dealt only with rifle and pistol bullets the points of which had been partially exposed.

No. 93

NOTE addressed by the General Commanding the 5th Army to the Commander-in-Chief on the subject of the dum-dum bullets used by the German army.

HEADQUARTERS, 6 P.M., *September* 8, 1914.

The General commanding the 5th Army has already forwarded, together with a detailed report, certain bullets taken from a German officer, the flat ends of which had been slit. Certain officers amongst our prisoners, to whom the facts of the case have been stated and protests made, and upon whom were found bullets of the ordinary kind, energetically deny that the use of dum-dum bullets has occurred as a general measure resulting from the orders of the German higher authorities. They all declare that such incidents must be regarded as unusual and doubtless due to the action of certain fanatical officers.

A new fact has come to light, however, which the General commanding the 5th Army now brings to the knowledge of the Commander-in-Chief, and which gives the lie to this interpretation of the facts, proving incontestably that dum-dum bullets are used throughout the German army by soldiers (possibly chosen from amongst the best shots in each unit) as well as by officers, and that their use is sanctioned by the higher authorities.

The systematic and regular manner in which the bullets have been split (samples forwarded herewith) affords indisputable proof that their condition is not the result of any individual initiative. These bullets were taken from the body of a German at Charleville, about ten kilometres to the north-west of Sézanne; they have been forwarded this day to the 5th Army by the 10th Army Corps. It would seem advisable to lay the facts before the Powers which signed the Convention at The Hague.

(*Signed*) D'ESPEREY,
General, commanding the 5th Army.

Copy taken.

(*Signed*) HELY D'OISSEL,
General, Chief of Staff.

No. 94

REPORT by the Director of the technical branch of the Artillery, concerning five cartridges made for the "Parabellum" pistol.

The five cartridges received for examination are German ammunition intended for use in the 9 mil. "Parabellum" pistol (Borchardt Lueger), which appears to have been substituted in the German army two or three years ago for the 7.65 mm. pistol of the same type.

The automatic pistol, with chamber for eight cartridges, carries under normal conditions with a speed

of V10 to a distance of 370 yards,[1] the cartridge being loaded with an encased bullet (core of hardened lead in a nickel wrapping), which presents on the outside an appearance exactly similar to that of the bullet of the cartridges now forwarded for examination.

These were made by the Deutsche Waffen und Munitionen Gesellschaft (D.W.M.) in its branch factory at Karlsruhe (K).[2]

The bullet, of the same type as the normal bullet, has a conical hole cut in its head, similar to that introduced in the case of the bullet of 1886 to make the new pattern cartridge of the stand model of 1906, but with this difference, that the edge of the metal casing is let in on the inside of the cavity as shown in the annexed photograph of the cut cartridge.

These bullets are therefore of the dum-dum type called by English ammunition makers "solid nose hollow."

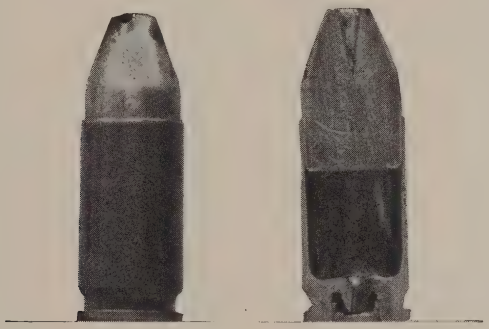
The effect of this cavity, however, does not appear to be such as might be expected from observation of the results given by rifle bullets of a similar kind. Four of the cartridges under examination were fired at boxes filled with sawdust, and two of them, tested by the

[1] Speed measured with normal cartridges before firing them into boxes filled with sawdust.

[2] Total length of the cartridge . . . . 29 mm.
Total weight . . . . . 12.35 gr.
Weight of the bullet . . . . . 7.92 gr.
Weight of the charge . . . . . 0.350 gr.

interposition of a plank, calculated to produce the effect of passing through a hard body, behaved in a manner precisely similar to that of the ordinary cartridges which were fired at the same time.

Be this as it may, there can be no doubt as to the intention to increase the wounding power of these



Dum-dum bullets, solid nose hollow type

bullets by producing a sort of explosion of the head of the missile.

The cartridges examined, intended for use in the German regulation-pattern Parabellum pistol, of 9 mm. bore, come under the heading of bullets prohibited by the terms of paragraph 1 of the Declaration of The Hague of the 29th July, 1899.

Enclosed are two photographs showing the cartridge uncut and cut.

(*Signed*) V. Leleu.

No. 95

DESPATCH from the Minister of War to the Minister for Foreign Affairs.

BORDEAUX, *October* 10, 1914.

SIR,—Under date of the 3d October, you were good enough to communicate to me a telegram in which the Ambassador of the French Republic at Berne expressed a desire that we should send him samples of bullets found either on the person of German wounded soldiers or picked up on the field of battle, in order that he might show them to the Federal Council and to the *Journal de Genève.*

To this end I have the honour to forward to you herewith, leaving it to you to use them as you may think fit:

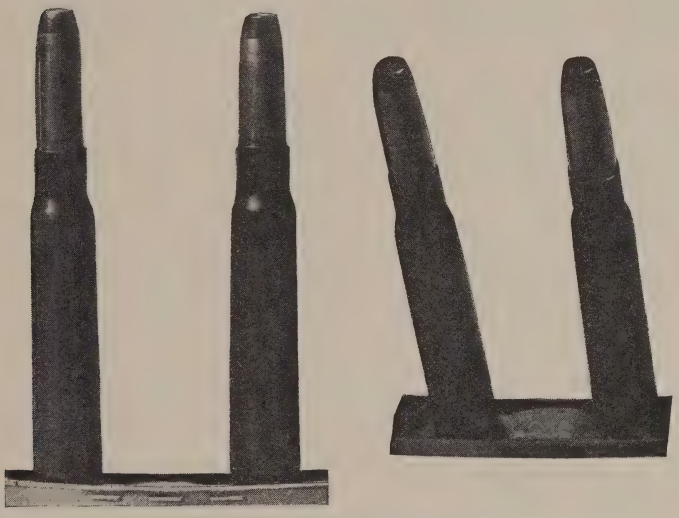
(1) A cartridge clip containing bullets, the metal covering of which is incomplete, picked up on the 9th August near the German Customs at the neck of the Pass at Schlucht.

(2) A cartridge clip containing four cartridges, the bullets of which are nicked with cross-shaped incisions; this was found on the 20th September by the artillery of the 16th Division at the south-east of the forest at Argonne, in the direction of Serancourt and Amblaincourt.

(3) A cartridge clip containing three cartridges, two

of which have cross-shaped incisions on the bullets; this was found on the 3d September on the battlefield of Ecordal.

(4) Two cartridges with bullets marked with cross-



Soft-nosed bullets contained in a clip found near the German Customs House, Pass of Schlucht, August 9, 1914

shaped incisions, found on the 11th September on the battlefield of Oyes (Marne).

Two cartridges containing "reversed" bullets, which were taken from the clip found on a wounded German on the 12th September at Bussy-le-Château.

(5) An expanding bullet found on the 13th September at the farm of Vauchamp by a gunner of the 41st Regiment of Artillery.

(6) Five cartridges designed for use in a pistol of the "Parabellum" type (the bullet having a conical hole at the point). These were found in a limber abandoned by the enemy in the wood of Saint-Mansuy, south-east of Lunéville, at the beginning of September. They must be classified under the heading of dum-dum bullets.

(7) A piece of the cord used for setting fire to houses, found on the 18th September at the village of Fleury-sur-Aixe.

I enclose herewith a translation of a German document which has been forwarded to me by the General Commanding-in-Chief, and which establishes beyond all possibility of dispute the enemy's use of explosive bullets. I am having this document photographed; it was issued by Baron von Lüttwitz, General Commanding the 4th Army. In a few days I will send you proofs of this photograph, together with copies of the documents which substantiate its authenticity.[1]

No. 96

REPORT by Lieutenant-Colonel Leleu, Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery, with reference to a cartridge found on a soldier of the 2d Regiment of the Prussian Infantry of the Guard.

[1] See below, document No. 98.

PARIS, *24th October*, 1914.

The complete cartridge, of which a photograph is annexed to the present report (together with those of its separate parts), is made in a case similar to that used for the German cartridge of the model of 1898, but it bears unusual marks.

These marks may stand for *Rheinische Waffen Sprengstoff N* model of 1888 (cartridge or rifle understood) of 8 mm. The bullet, measuring 8.07 mm. at its base, can be used for the 7.9 calibre rifle. It has been ascertained that the finished cartridge fits the magazines of the German rifles of the 1888 and 1898 models.

The powder used is not the same as the German regulation powder. It contains no nitro-glycerine and no fixatives, with the exception of a little camphor. Its gelatinization, malaxation, and softening with graphite have been carried out in a manner inferior to that of the German powder in regular use. Up to a certain point, it may be likened to the powder, made of pure cellulose, used in the German regulation cartridges of the 1888 model.

The bullet, which at first was believed to be plugged with a priming of fulminate, simply contains at its point a little copper tube 9.5 mm. long and 3.25 mm. in width at its exterior diameter, closed at its upper end.

This bullet, of which the casing surrounding the

leaden core has been stript away over a length of 10 mm. at the point, has been bored out, so as to contain the little copper tube above referred to. In spite of the hollow thus produced, it weighs 16 grammes, which fact is accounted for by its length of 32 mm.[1] and the extra weight of lead at the tip. The remaining portion of the outer casing is held together by two in-turning clips, of which one makes a regular hook. This kind of bullet is to be found in the collection of Kynoch's sporting ammunition under the heading of "soft-nose hollow copper tube." It must be classed under the category of dum-dum bullets, of which it is indeed one of the most grievously wounding types. The fore part of the bullet is actually constructed so as to produce a severe mushrooming effect when coming in contact with hard bodies. The copper tube, moreover, which enables it to retain in flight the ballistic properties of a solid-nosed bullet, results in producing at the point of contact a consolidation of the striking surface and thereafter a tearing action throughout the region of the spreading wound which it makes. It may therefore be regarded as a real mechanically-exploding bullet.

(*Signed*) V. LELEU.
Lt.-Col., Director of the Technical Branch of the Artillery.

[1] The length of the German bullet, 1888 model, is 31.25 mm.

No. 97

COMMUNICATION made by Dr. Tuffier to the Academy of Medicine (vide Report of the proceedings of the Academy of Medicine; meeting of the 24th November, 1914) having reference to the nature of certain serious wounds produced by the use of "reversed" bullets.

In the communication which I addressed to the Academy of Medicine on the 18th of October, I considered it my duty to inform you that a number of wounds which had been shown to me and alleged to have been caused by explosive bullets, might very well have been produced by the bursting of an ordinary bullet on a bone; and I added that, to be able to assert positively the existence of explosive bullets, they must have been found either in the cartridge belt or the magazine of a rifle of a combatant. Today, I bring before you proofs of the existence, in the German army, of rifle bullets which have been rendered more deadly by a very simple manipulation.

In the course of a mission to the north-east front, near Arras, I observed, in the case of casualties returned from the trenches, certain wounds of which the orifice at the point of entry and the deeply conical form could not be reconciled with the use of cylindro-conical bullets. This perplexed me, and I took occasion to

discuss the matter with one of my colleagues of the Paris hospitals, Dr. Potherat (Chief Surgeon of the 7th Field Hospital of the 10th Army), who had quite recently extracted from the hand of a French soldier a bullet which had entered by its lower end, which had retained its normal shape, and of which the point remained visible above the surface of the skin. Furthermore, certain soldiers who had been provided with bullet-stoppers (to all intents and purposes, shields) told me that, in certain cases, bullets seemed to strike the steel plate with a peculiar noise and left upon it an unusually large mark. These arguments were not in themselves quite conclusive. At the same time, however, a Captain of Infantry declared to me that he had found German cartridges in which the bullets had been reversed, that is to say, with the end pointing inwards. I followed up my investigation from this point.

In order to understand fully that which follows, it is necessary to be familiar with the manner in which these projectiles are made. The French bullet is cylindro-conical and composed of a single homogeneous metal; the German bullet is not homogeneous, being made of two metals of unequal density, a very thin outer covering of ferro-nickel, sheathing a regular cylindro-conical leaden bullet. The hard outer covering is incomplete; it surrounds the point and the surface of the bullet, but does not extend to its base, and I desire to emphasize the importance of this fact. At this level, the leaden

core is there laid bare, as you can verify for yourselves by examining this cartridge clip. The danger of bullets known by the name of dum-dum lies in the fact that they are composed of two metals (a hard outer covering and a soft inner core) differing in density and pliability; on penetrating the body the lead is expelled from its casing and creates a regular explosion in the wound. It is quite easy to produce this explosive effect without making the slightest alteration either in the shape or the general appearance of the German bullet; all that one need do is to reverse the bullet, that is to say, to place it with its end pointing inwards, and with the base, in which the lead is loose, pointing outwards. Bullets fired under these conditions strike the tissues over a surface which forms something in the nature of a hard ring, in the midst of which the free lead, expelled from its sheathing, lacerates the tissues.

If you examine more closely the concavity at the base of this bullet, you will perceive that it makes a sort of little air chamber, which greatly facilitates the opening up of the edges.

As for the manner in which the bullet is reversed the German prisoners themselves have told us how it is done. The operation is facilitated by the fact that the bullet may be readily extracted from its socket, in which it is not firmly embedded. Grasping the cartridge firmly in the hand, and inserting the point of the bullet in the end of the rifle barrel, the soldiers are able

to shake and displace the bullet, which becomes detached in its copper socket and falls out.

All they have then to do is to put the bullet back, head foremost, into the same socket and to press it lightly on the base; it is then fixed in position and may be fired.

II. German Evidence

No. 98

ORDER of the day by General von Lüttwitz, concerning explosive bullets.

4th Army.

Vouziers, *September* 15, 1914.
Luxemburg.

At Headquarters.

Near the bridge of Etrepy certain German cartridges have been found with grooved points. These come under the heading of explosive bullets; they are only intended to be used in time of peace on rifle ranges of insufficient length, and they have been included in our war ammunition by an oversight.

As the effect of these bullets in penetrating the human body is similar to that of a dum-dum bullet, the Army Headquarters, wishing to avoid denunciations on the part of the French, considers it necessary that instructions on the subject should be issued to all terri-

A. O. K. 4. Vauziers, den 15. 9. 14.

An,
Oberste Heeresleitung
Luxemburg.

Bei der Brücke von Etrepy wurden deutsche Fahrzeuge mit Killen an der Spitze gefunden. Die Geschosse sind Zerspaller-Munition, die nur für den Feldgebrauch auf Schießplätzen mit nicht genügend langen Auslaufgelände bestimmt, versehentlicherweise in die Munitionsbestände gekommen ist. Da die Wirkung dieser Geschosse beim Aufschlagen auf den menschlichen Körper dieselbe sein dürfte, wie die neuen Dum-Dum-Geschosse, so glaubt das A. O. K. den Untersuchungen der französischen Seite zuvorkommen, darauf hinweisen zu sollen, daß nun Untersuchung der feindlichen Munitions-Aufgabestellen und der übrigen A. O. K's. angezeigt erscheint.

V. z. d. G. K.
gez. Frh. v. Lüttwitz

Nach Abgang:
1) der Flugzeug-Inspektion.
Es ist dafür Sorge zu tragen, daß keine Zerspaller-Munition in die Front kommt
2) dem II. und VII. A. K. IV. und XVIII. R. K.
Möglicherweise bei der Truppe vorhandene Zerspaller-Munition ist zu vernichten.

V. z. d. A. O. K.
I. a.
Unterschrift.

Gen. Kdo. VIII. A. K. v. 16. 9. 14. – Tgb. 818.

16. Division. Aure, 25. 9. 14.

Abdruck.

Verteilungsplan: 30. Inf. Brig. m. 8 Abdr., 31. Inf. Brig. m. 8 Abdr. 16. K. A. Kr. m. 6 Abdr. Hess. R. 7 m. 5 Abdr.; 2. u. 3. Komp. Pi. 8 Pion. Komp. 2. ½ Hess. A. 9. Div. 3.

No. 98

torial dépôts for the distribution of ammunition, and to other army headquarters.

By order of the General Commanding the Army,

(*Signed*) Baron Von Lüttwitz.

To be noted by

(1) The Inspectors of Ordnance Stores.

These should take measures to prevent any explosive bullets being forwarded to the front.

(2) The 6th and 8th Army Corps, and the 8th and 18th Corps of Reserve.

As far as possible all explosive bullets in the hands of the troops are to be destroyed.

By order of the General Commanding the Army.

(*Signature*)

Headquarters of the 8th Army Corps,
16th *September*, 1914, 1st Section No. 818.

16th Divison.

Aure, *September* 25, 1914.

The above general order to be reproduced for communication to the following units: 30th Brigade of Infantry, 8; 31st Brigade of Infantry, 8; 16th Brigade of Field Artillery, 6; 7th Regiment of Hussars, 5; 2d and 3d Companies of the 8th Battalion of Pioneers, 8; Medical Detachment, 2; half regiment of the 9th Unmounted Artillery, 9; Staff of the 3d Division.

No. 99

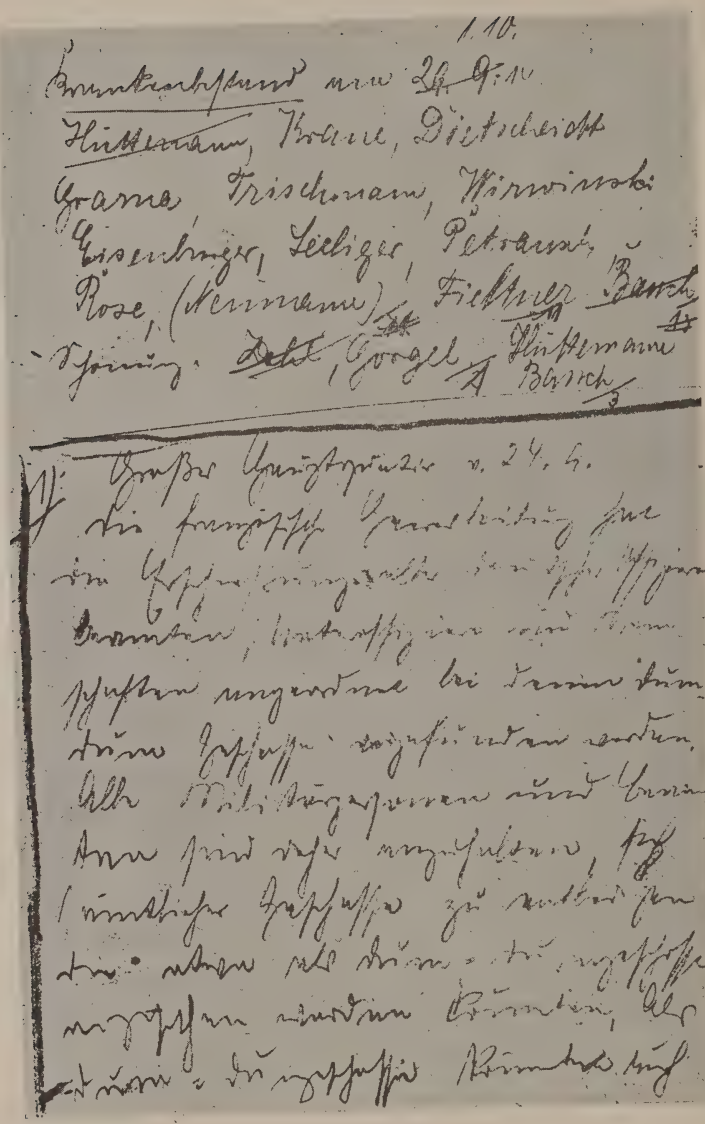
EXTRACT from a notebook apparently belonging to Sergeant-Major Kohler of the 7th Reserve Regiment.

"Grosses Hauptquartier d. 24. 9.

"Die französische Heeresleitung hat die Erschiessung aller deutscher Offiziere, Beamten, Unteroffiziere und Mannschaften angeordnet bei denen dum-dum Geschosse vorgefunden werden. Alle Militärpersonen und Beamten sind daher anzuhalten, sich sämtlicher Geschosse zu entledigen die etwa als Dum-dumgeschosse angesehen werden könnten. Als Dum-dumgeschosse könnte auch solche Pistolenmunition gelten die nicht mit Vollmantelgeschoss ausgestattet ist, sondern an deren Spitze der Mantel abgeschnitten und so umgefalzt ist, dass der Bleikern sichtbar war, dies soll bei der Munition der Parabellum Pistole z. B. der Fall sein. Solche Munition in deren Bleikern Löcher gebohrt sind kommt auch als Dum-dumgeschoss in Frage. Das abgeplattete Vollmantelgeschoss der vorschrifts mässigen Armeepistole ist nicht als solche anzusehen.

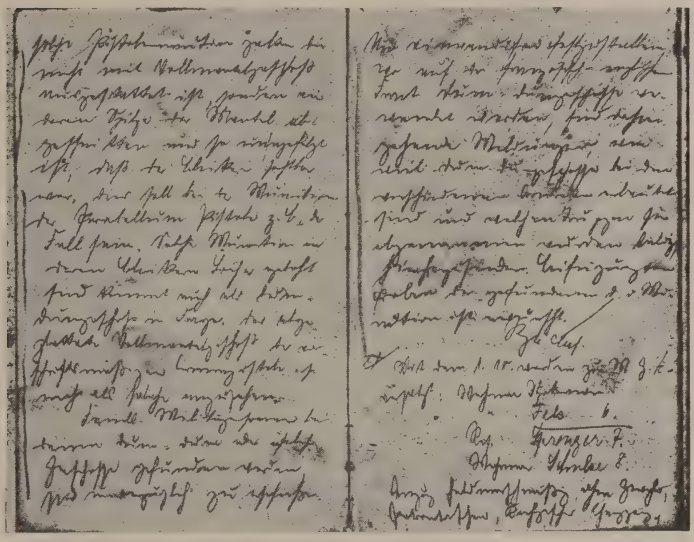
"Feindl. Militärpersonen bei denen Dum-dum oder ähnliche Geschosse gefunden werden sind unverzüglich zu erschiessen.

"Um einwandsfrei festzustellen, wo auf der französischenglischen Front Dum-dumgeschosse verwendet



No. 99

werden, sind dahingehende Meldungen, wieviel Dum-dumgeschosse bei den verschiedenen Armeen erbeutet sind, und welchen Truppen sie abgenommen wurden



No. 99

baldigst hierherzusenden. Beifügung von Proben der gefundenen D. d. Munition ist erwünscht.

"13.10. Unter der Inf. Munition einzelner Mannsch[aften] des Korps sind vereinzelt sowohl Patronen der sogenannten Zerscheller Munition als auch Patronen, deren Spitzen anscheinend durch Bereibung mit einem harten Gegenstand geringfügig abgeflacht ist. Sämtliche Mannschaften sind darauf hinzuweisen, dass sie wegen des Dum-dumgeschoss ähnlichen Charakters

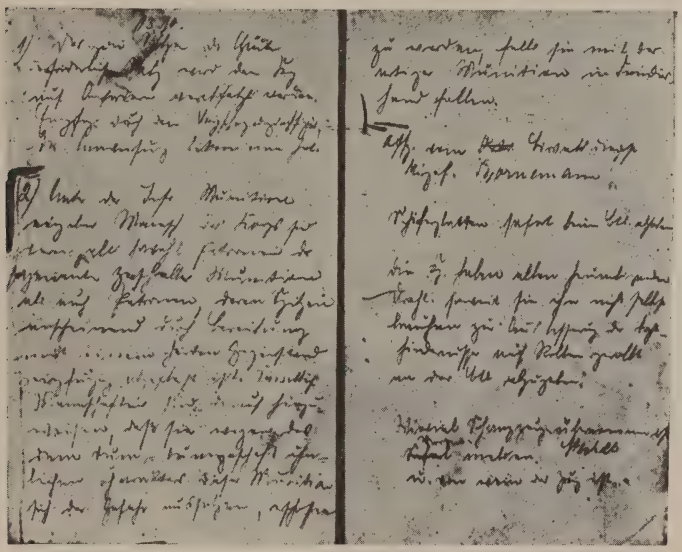
dieser Munition sich der Gefahr aussetzen, erschossen zu werden, falls sie mit derartiger Munition in Feindeshand fallen."

"From Army Headquarters (24th September): The Commander-in-chief of the French Army has issued orders to shoot all officers, military and civil, and all non-commissioned officers and men belonging to the German forces who shall be found in possession of dum-dum bullets. All officers and other persons serving with the Army should be warned that they must get rid of any ammunition which may by any means be considered as coming under the category of dum-dum bullets. This description applies, for instance, to certain kinds of pistol ammunition of which the bullet is not completely covered, that is to say, at the end of which the casing has been broken and turned back, so that the leaden core is visible; it would seem to apply, for instance, to the ammunition used in the 'Parabellum' revolver. Ammunition in which the leaden core is pierced with holes may also be called in question. On the other hand, the bullet used in the service revolver with its unbroken, flattened casing cannot be included under that heading.

"Any of the enemy's troops who may be found in possession of dum-dum or similar bullets must be shot on the spot.

"In order to determine beyond all possibility of doubt

those points on the Anglo-French front where dum-dum bullets are being used, information is immediately to be given us as to the number of these projectiles which are captured from the different armies, indicating at the



No. 99

same time from what units they have been taken. Samples of ammunition thus found should be forwarded with the official report.

"13th October. Amongst the infantry ammunition which has been issued to certain men of the corps, there is a cartridge known as the 'Zerscheller,' also another type of cartridge, of which the point of the

bullet appears to have been slightly flattened by rubbing with some hard object.

"Ammunition of this kind is liable to be classified as dum-dum bullets, and the men should be warned that they run the risk of being shot if captured with cartridges of this kind in their possession."

CHAPTER VII

USE OF BURNING LIQUIDS AND ASPHYXIATING GASES

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

THE contracting Powers forbid the use of projectiles the sole object of which is to disseminate asphyxiating or deleterious gases.

(Declaration of The Hague, July 29, 1899.)

In addition to the prohibitions provided by special Conventions, it is particularly forbidden:

(*a*) *To employ poison or poisoned weapons;*

(*b*) *To kill or wound by treachery individuals belonging to the hostile nation or army;*

(*c*) *To employ arms, projectiles, or material calculated to cause unnecessary suffering.*

(Regulations of The Hague, art. 23.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

No. 100

MEMORANDUM by the French Government concerning the use of burning liquids by the German troops.

PARIS, *April* 29, 1915.

For some time past, the French military authorities have noted the abominable methods used by the German troops against the armies of the Republic, in violation of all the undertakings solemnly given by the German Imperial Government to the other Powers, and in contempt of all the sentiments of humanity.

The Minister for Foreign Affairs has today the honour of communicating to . . . the enclosed document from the German Headquarters Staff of the Second Army, Note 32, dated from Saint-Quentin, October 16, 1914, containing the directions by the German authorities for the use of burning liquids.

"HEADQUARTERS,

"2d Army, *Note* 32. "SAINT-QUENTIN, *October* 16, 1914.

"The projected attack on the enemy opposite to us will, for special considerations, be resumed later, after a short interval.

"It is therefore of great importance that the information gleaned in the course of the fighting at close quarters which has just taken place should be summed up and brought to the knowledge of all the troops, so that on the resumption of the offensive, they may be the common property of all officers.

"With regard to infantry attacks, the corps require no new instructions.

"But in respect of the use of engineers, it is necessary to call attention to the following points:

"ENGINEERS.—General Notice.

. . . . . .

" *Attack on fortified positions.*

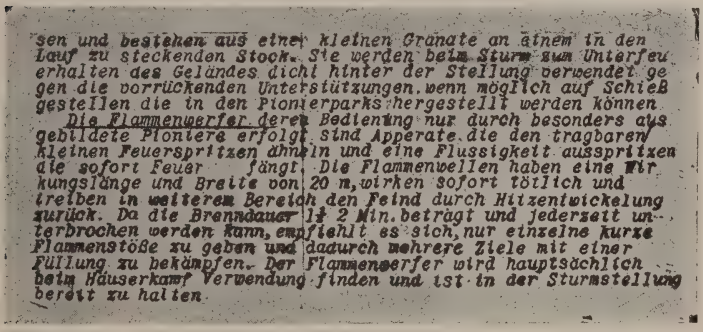
. . . . . .

"*Means at the disposal of the Engineers for fighting at close quarters.*

"Flame projectors and burning liquids.

"These will be placed at the disposal of the Army Corps according to their requirements by the Commander-in-Chief. The Corps will at the same time receive the skilled operators indispensable for working these engines, who will be reinforced, after giving the necessary instruction, by engineers of the companies chosen for this service.

. . . . . .



sen und bestehen aus einer kleinen Granate an einem in den Lauf zu steckenden Stock. Sie werden beim Sturm zum Unterfeuerhalten des Geländes dicht hinter der Stellung verwendet gegen die vorrückenden Unterstützungen. wenn möglich auf Schieß gestellen die in den Pionierparks hergestellt werden können.

Die Flammenwerfer deren Bedienung nur durch besonders ausgebildete Pioniere erfolgt, sind Apperate die den tragbaren kleinen Feuerspritzen ähneln und eine Flussigkeit ausspritzen die sofort Feuer fängt. Die Flammenwellen haben eine Wirkungslänge und Breite von 20 m, wirken sofort tötlich und treiben in weiterem Bereich den Feind durch Hitzentwickelung zurück. Da die Brenndauer 1½ 2 Min. beträgt und jederzeit unterbrochen werden kann, empfiehlt es sich, nur einzelne kurze Flammenstöße zu geben und dadurch mehrere Ziele mit einer Füllung zu bekämpfen. Der Flammenwerfer wird hauptsächlich beim Häuserkampf Verwendung finden und ist in der Sturmstellung bereit zu halten.

"Flame projectors are to be used by engineers specially trained to handle them; they are objects resembling a portable fire extinguisher and eject a liquid which at once ignites spontaneously. The waves of

flame have an effective range of twenty square metres. Their deadly effect is instantaneous, and they throw back the enemy to a considerable distance by means of the great heat they generate. As they burn for a period of from one and a half to two minutes, and may be arrested at will, operators are advised to produce short isolated flames, so that they may be able to attack at several points with a single supply of the liquid. Flame projectors are to be used chiefly in street-fighting, and are to be kept in readiness at the point whence an attack by storming is delivered, ready for use."

(Translation certified as a correct rendering of the original.)

(*Signed*) L. LINARD,
Commandant of Artillery.

No Government can remain defenceless against such refinements of barbarity without endangering the safety of its troops.

The Government of the Republic, governed solely by its military exigencies, accordingly proposes to adopt every means calculated to prevent the German soldiers and military authorities from committing their premeditated crimes and murders.

No. 101

FROM the Minister of War to the Minister of Foreign Affairs.

PARIS, *May* 6, 1915.

In your despatch of the 3d instant (Directorate of

Political and Commercial Affairs, Europe, No. 1704), you asked me to forward to you the reports and documents in my possession concerning the use by the Germans of asphyxiating gas on the Yser Canal.

I have the honour to submit the first results of the consequent inquiry.

Attacks by means of asphyxiating gas were made on several occasions from April 22d to April 26th against the French, English, and Belgian fronts successively, but the first, directed against our front on the 22d, was by far the most important.

The Director of the Municipal Laboratory, M. Kling, who was instructed to make an inquiry on the spot was able to obtain a certain amount of evidence at Dunkirk, Zuydcoote, Houthey, and Ronsebrughe from the military authorities, the medical staff, and various sufferers, and to examine and analyse a certain amount of incriminating material.

From the general evidence it would seem that the asphyxiating medium used by the enemy against our lines was chlorine. This gas, according to prisoners made in the counter-attack that followed, was contained in steel cylinders placed at intervals of twenty or thirty yards along the trenches, and fitted with a tube directed towards our lines. On the days when the climatic conditions were favourable, the wind being in the north-east, engineers specially trained for this

work turned the taps, and the gas, spreading over the surface of the ground, began to flow in the direction of the wind in a cloud of varying denseness.

According to several of the wounded who were present at the attack or suffered from its effects, the fumes that came from certain trenches were mixed with a black smoke, which was very probably used to show the assailants just when the asphyxiating cloud reached our trenches, and thus to indicate the moment when they should be attacked.

In order to protect them from the return draught of the gas to their own trenches, the engineers who worked the gas-engines were provided with respirator-helmets. The German infantry soldiers who had to attack, had each a little pouch of waterproof material containing a respirator of grey canvas padded on the inside with cotton wool slightly moistened, which was found on analysis to be impregnated with hyposulphate of sodium. These respirators are fitted closely over the nose and mouth by means of strings, so as to absorb the greater part of the chlorine mixed with the air, and thus to preserve those who wear them from the danger of suffocation.

It was not possible to find out whether this precaution had been effectual, but according to one German prisoner, the majority of the engineers who operated were seriously affected, in spite of their protecting masks, and "a certain number of them were seen lying

insensible, with their faces against the ground, beside their empty cylinders."

The inquiry failed to establish with certainty whether the Germans used bombs and shells filled with deleterious products, in addition to the noxious gases described.

Whether the asphyxiating gas, the use of which by the German troops has now been established, consists solely of chlorine (as M. Kling declares), or of a mixture of chlorine and some other noxious gas (as Dr. Magnan, Director of the School of Higher Research, Surgeon-Major auxiliary attached to the anti-typhic Laboratory of the Army, seems to suppose), or finally of some mixture of bromine and gaseous hydrochloric acid, as certain information furnished by the English Government seems to show, it is none the less certain, in any case, that by its use the Germans have once again proclaimed their cynical contempt for clearly formulated international agreements.

Under these circumstances, I think that you should acquaint neutral countries with these facts, and draw their attention to the violation of the formal regulations laid down in the Hague Declaration of July 29, 1899.

(*Signed*) A. MILLERAND.

No. 102

REPORT of Superintendent Sieur, Head of the Medical Department of the Detachment of the Belgian Army, to the Inspector-General and Director-

General of the Medical Department, concerning the cases of poisoning treated after the attack at Langhemarck, April 23, 1915.

April 25, 1915.

On the evening of Friday, April 23d, the troops in the first line were suddenly exposed to the action of corrosive vapours, produced, according to several sufferers whom I questioned personally, in the following manner:

(1) Bombs burst a considerable distance off. According to the information furnished by a superior officer, a jet of clear liquid rose into the air at the moment of the explosion, as if the projectile had fallen into a large pool of water. Immediately afterwards, this liquid was transformed into a greenish yellow gas heavier than air, giving off a distinct smell of chlorine. This smell persisted for a long time, for certain officers who arrived with reinforcements some ten or twelve hours after the explosion noticed a smell which they compared to the fumes of chloride of lime.

(2) Certain sufferers declared that they saw rockets burst which they described as illuminating rockets, and these also produced a heavy asphyxiating gas.

(3) A great many of the sufferers, and notably a very intelligent non-commissioned officer, stationed in a trench about fifty yards from the German trenches, declare that they noticed men wearing masks over their faces and furnished with some kind of apparatus

and with poles, who ejected the same yellowish vapour, which was carried by the wind towards the French trenches.

Whatever the method of production, the immediate action upon the men enveloped by the poison-cloud was manifested by a sensation of suffocation, smarting of the eyelids, nostrils, and throat, and a sort of expiratory spasm which arrested the normal action of breathing. Some of the sufferers seem to have become unconscious, and to have been picked up some time after, but in the opinion of all those who succeeded in escaping from the front line of trenches, which were most exposed to the vapour, the majority of the occupants must have succumbed very rapidly to the poison.

The number of sufferers treated for asphyxiation so far (thirty-six hours after the event) is . . . Three died at the end of twenty-four hours but the majority were relieved in from four to five hours.

From the clinical point of view, the sufferers not very violently affected showed the following symptoms: redness and swelling of the face, a slight affection of the eyelids, a hard, thready pulse (120 to 130), intense dyspnœa, and upon examination with the stethoscope, a pronounced pulmonary congestion especially at the bases of the lungs, marked by short fits of coughing, with copious expectoration of a rusty colour. At the beginning this showed streaks of blood, though it never presented the character of hemoptysis.

Post-mortem examination of the three victims who succumbed within twenty-four hours of the attack revealed the following injuries: violent congestion of the lower part of the trachea; splenization of the lungs especially marked at the bases. Incisions showed that the lungs were greatly congested and charged with blood, and under pressure a large quantity of hematic liquid oozed from the pulmonary cells. There was no ulceration, either of the nasal mucous membrane, the pharynx, or the tracheo-bronchial membrane. As to the other viscera, there was slight œdema of the brain, but no very characteristic affection either of the liver or the kidneys. It may, however, be noted that the urine found on one of the sufferers showed traces of albumin.

A searching examination of the blood was made in the case of sufferers markedly affected by the poison, and the enclosed result of this examination shows a slight affection of the hemoglobin, but the use of strong reagents failed to demonstrate the presence of excessive chlorine, seeing that the blood is normally very rich in chloride of sodium. However, further researches are in progress.

To sum up: we found that the patients were suffering from poisoning caused by a gaseous substance heavier than air, which seems to have been thrown into the first line of trenches by means of bombs and asphyxiating rockets, and also perhaps by means of a pumping

apparatus containing a liquid which was in all probability liquefied chlorine.

The last method of use is the one least clearly established by the narratives of the various sufferers interrogated. Some of these attribute the production of the thick toxic cloud which suddenly invaded the front trenches to the ignition of some substance, or to a chemical reaction caused by the masked soldiers of whom they speak. Be this as it may, the factor which was most favourable to, or indeed, which perhaps made the asphyxiating action of the gas possible, was the direction of the wind.

(*Signed*) SIEUR.
Inspector-in-Chief of the Medical Service of the Belgian Military Detachment.

No. 103

CLINICAL, anatomo-pathological and histo-chemical study of cases of poisoning by the irritating gases used by the Germans at Langhemarck, by Doctors R. Dujarric de la Rivière, of the Pasteur Institute, and J. Leclercq, Licentiate of the Faculty of Medicine of Lille.

(Bulletin de l'Académie de Médecine, *Session of May* 11, 1915.)

We had under observation at Calais a relatively considerable number (112) of soldiers affected by the irritant gases (bromic and chloric vapours) used by the Germans at Langhemarck. In view of the short distance between Calais and the front, we were in a very

favourable position to observe these patients only a few hours after the attack.

The sufferers described the conditions under which the toxic phenomena appeared:

The German troops had placed in front of their first line of trenches, cylinders, at a distance of from two to four metres from each other, and from these, at a given moment, issued a cloud of vapour, yellow at first and then turning green. Driven by a favourable wind, these vapours soon reached the French lines, creeping along the ground.

The soldiers felt at first a violent irritation at the level of their eyes in the nostrils, and in the throat, and began to cough incessantly. They then experienced a sensation of constriction in the thorax, difficulty in breathing, and oppression. The throat and trachea became very painful. The patients felt an intra-thoracic burning. The cough became rapidly more painful, persistent, and spasmodic, the expectorations copious and tinged with blood in the majority of cases. At the same time, these men had a sense of abnormal fatigue, and of dimness of sight. Many of their comrades were unable to flee from the "gas-wave"; they died, vomiting blood very copiously. Others dragged themselves to the rear in an exhausted condition, vomiting and spitting blood, and passing blood in their urine.

When admitted to the hospital, most of these soldiers looked fatigued and depressed. Their eyes watered, their eyelids were swollen, and in some cases there were

symptoms of conjunctivitis; their cheek-bones and lips were purplish, their features drawn and nostrils pinched. The patients seemed to be choking and to have great difficulty in breathing; they were racked by incessant and very painful paroxysms of coughing; as they coughed, they held their chests between their hands, so acute was the pain caused to the thoracic muscles. The cough caused copious expectoration of a frothy, reddish character, sometimes with obvious traces of blood. Speech was difficult and spasmodic. The sight was clouded and there were general symptoms of prostration and asthenia.

The action of the irritant gases produced a variety of clinical manifestations. In the majority of cases, bronchial or pulmonary phenomena were most in evidence. But hepatic or kidney affections were fairly frequent, and sometimes more pronounced than any other symptoms, though generally associated with broncho-pulmonary trouble.

The pulmonary affections of the majority of our patients were not very serious. They consisted for the most part of inflammation of the whole respiratory system, extending to the most minute of the bronchial ramifications. In some of the sufferers, the pulmonary affection was very intense, as was shown by certain cases of broncho-pneumonia, and more especially of pulmonary gangrene, the complete evolution of which we followed.

Two patients were tabulated as suffering from hemo-

lytic icterus (jaundice); a third passed hemoglobin in his urine for several days. In several patients there was persistent albuminuria. The majority of the sufferers passed concentrated urine, highly coloured and containing numerous biliary pigments.

The histo-chemical and bacteriological examination of the sputa enabled us to follow, as it were, step by step, the evolution of the bronchial and pulmonary affections. Characterized at first by the presence of desquamative and polynuclear elements, the formula of the sputa was soon modified to show congestion and in some cases necrosis of the lungs.

At the outset in the majority of cases, the bacterial flora was insignificant; it is, however, important to note that a certain number of sputa contained anaërobes and in particular, Bacillus perfringens. In the cases of pulmonary gangrene we followed, the bacterial flora was very rich in anaërobes (B. perfringens, B. serpens, B. ramosus).

Finally, the post-mortem examination of a sufferer who died of pneumonia confirmed the data of the clinic and the laboratory. This post-mortem revealed the general signs of poisoning by irritant gases; serious congestion of all the respiratory organs, abnormal vascularization of the alimentary canal, degeneration in bulk of the liver, the spleen, and the kidneys. It also showed pneumonic thickening of the right lung, with partial gangrene of the base of this lung.

CHAPTER VIII

BOMBARDMENT OF FORTRESSES WITHOUT NOTICE, AND OF OPEN TOWNS; DESTRUCTION OF BUILDINGS DEDICATED TO PUBLIC WORSHIP, ART, SCIENCE, OR CHARITABLE PURPOSES

THE UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

THE attack or bombardment, by any means whatever, of undefended towns, villages, dwellings, or buildings, is forbidden.

The officer in command of an attacking force must do all in his power to warn the authorities before commencing a bombardment, except in cases of assault.

In sieges and bombardments all necessary steps must be taken to spare, as far as possible, buildings dedicated to public worship, art, science, or charitable purposes, historic monuments, hospitals, and places where sick and wounded are collected, provided they are not being used at the time for military purposes.

Family honour and rights, individual life and private property as well as religious convictions and worship must be respected.

(Articles 25, 26, 27, and 46 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

The German army, in France as in Belgium, bombarded and destroyed so many towns and villages, so many buildings dedicated to art, science, and charitable purposes, without any military purpose, and these crimes have been so openly committed in the sight of the world that it will be unnecessary to cite many documents here.

We shall therefore be content to reproduce the memorandum addressed by the Government of the Republic to the Powers, at the beginning of the war, protesting against the first bombardment of the town of Pont-à-Mousson, and two of the documents relating to the bombardment of Reims Cathedral.

No. 104

MEMORANDUM addressed to the Powers by the French Government on the 16th August, 1914.

The Government of the French Republic has the honour to bring to the knowledge of the Powers signatory of The Hague Convention the facts hereinafter stated, which constitute a violation by the German military authorities of the Convention signed on the 18th October, 1907, by the Imperial German Government.

At 3.30 A.M. on the 11th August, from 10 A.M. till noon on the 12th August, and from 4 A.M. to 6 A.M. on the 14th August, without any warning or preliminary

notice, the open and undefended town of Pont-à-Mousson (Meurthe-et-Moselle), a place of 13,000 inhabitants, was bombarded by the German forces under the following conditions:

The bombardment was carried out by means of guns placed in position and concealed on the other side of the frontier. A captive balloon stationed above the batteries enabled them to get the range accurately. The fire was directed more particularly towards the hospital, a historic building, duly marked by the Red Cross flag.

The shells which fell in the town killed seven persons and wounded eight others, all women and children.

The Conventions of The Hague have thus been violated in the following particulars:

(1) The bombardment was directed against an open and undefended town (Article 25 of the Rules appended to Convention 4 of The Hague).

(2) The bombardment took place without preliminary notice (Article 26 of the Rules appended to Convention 4 of The Hague).

(3) It was specially directed against a hospital and a historic building (Article 27 of the Rules appended to Convention 4 of The Hague).

It is impossible to conceive any reason for this bombardment; it was not preceded by any demand for the surrender of the place, nor was it followed by any surrender, nor by its occupation by the enemy's forces,

which did not even make their appearance before the town. It must therefore be regarded as an act of wanton cruelty.

No. 105

MEMORANDUM by the Vicar-General, Landrieux and M. R. Thinot, Chapel-master of Reims Cathedral, concerning the burning and bombardment of the cathedral, September 17–19, 1914.

(1) There was nothing to justify the bombardment of the cathedral, either on Saturday the 19th September (the day of the fire) nor on the previous days. No anti-aircraft guns had ever been placed in position there, much less any heavy artillery, nor had the building given shelter to any troops. Neither men nor munitions of war had ever been stationed in its immediate vicinity; it was not used as a post of military observation.

It is perfectly true, however, that the Germans, towards the end of their occupation of Reims, had used the north tower as an observation post.[1]

[1] The White Flag which was flown from the north tower at the time of the bombardment of September 4th, remained there until the day after the departure of the Germans. On the morning of the 13th, it was removed (at the same time as the Red Cross flag, which had been flown from the same flagstaff on the Saturday by the Germans) and replaced by the French national flag, which until the morning of Thursday, September 27th, remained alone floating over Notre-Dame. That morn-

(2) The German artillery directed their aim purposely towards the cathedral and bombarded it systematically on the 17th, 18th, and 19th September. It is possible to admit, perhaps, that the shells which had previously struck it (4th September) and those which damaged it later (24th September and 12th October) may have hit it by accident.

(3) As regards this attack upon the cathedral, it is difficult to deny premeditation. On the contrary, there is proof of it in the language which was used by the German Press both before and after the event.[1]

The enemy has shown no scruples of any sort, either humanitarian or æsthetic.

At a time when Reims was swarming with spies who kept the enemy well informed, seventy to eighty German wounded were openly carried into the cathedral and laid there on the very same straw which the Prussian authorities had caused to be placed in the building. From and after this moment two Red Cross flags were displayed on the north tower.

---

ing, as it will be stated later on, two Red Cross flags and on the following day, a third were flown alongside of the Tricolour. During the following weeks the largest of these was carried away by the wind; the other two are still flying.

[1] Extract from the *Berliner Blatt* of September 5, 1914 (No. 208): "The portion of our Armies in the West of France has already passed the second line of the defending fortifications with the exception of Reims. The royal splendour of this city, dating back to the time of the White Lilies, will of a certainty soon crumble in the dust beneath the blows of our 42 centimetre shells."

As regards the German contempt for all æsthetic considerations, the announcement recently made public by General von Disfurth in the *Tag* affords sufficient confirmation of the accuracy of our statement. He wrote as follows:

"It is beneath our dignity to defend our troops against unjust accusations, whether coming from within or without. Neither we nor our troops owe any explanation to anybody; we have nothing to justify, nothing to excuse. Everything which our soldiers may do to injure the enemy and to win victory for our flag will be justified in advance and considered as well done; at least that is how we must regard it. We need not concern ourselves in the very least with the opinion of other countries, even of neutrals. And if all the monuments and all the masterpieces of architecture which stand between our guns and those of the enemy were to be blown to the devil, we should not care a straw. The thing is not worth a moment's discussion. Mars is master of the day, not Apollo. Let them call us barbarians if they like; we can laugh at them. At the worst, we may have to ask ourselves whether we have not deserved the name . . . but let them, for Heaven's sake, spare us once and for all any more of this idle chatter. Let them talk no more of the Cathedral of Reims, nor of all the churches and palaces which may share its fate. We have heard enough of them. Let us hear from Reims only the news of a second and

victorious entry of our troops. Nothing else matters to us in the very least."

The enemy only held their hand when their evil work had evidently been completed.

To state, as the German communiqués have done, that only a single shot from a mortar, and a few cannon-shots, were fired against the cathedral is to lie with exceptional impudence. At least forty shells struck the building, most of them projectiles of very large calibre. There is therefore far more truth in the statement published by the "Official Press Agency of Berlin" on the 20th September to the effect that at a certain date "the heavy artillery received orders to destroy the cathedral."

Further, when the scaffolding of the north-west angle was blazing furiously, when it was evident that no human power could avert the disaster, and that the building was doomed, two more shells crashed upon the roof, one on the nave, the other on the apse, and the latter certainly caused a second outbreak of fire.

II

The material facts may be summed up as follows, as the result of notes taken on the spot, which can be supported by photographs:

(1) On Friday the 4th September, the day before the entry of the enemy, the city was bombarded for an hour "as the result of an error," as the Germans put it.

They added, moreover, that they were scrupulously careful "to spare the cathedral." Nevertheless, it is undeniably true that the line along which their projectiles fell extended in front of and behind the edifice, coming steadily nearer and nearer to it. One shell hit it full (on the base of the gable of the north transept), and three others inflicted serious damage on the sculptures of the west porch and on the windows, particularly those of the north aisle.

A doubtful method this of sparing an architectural treasure, for which the Germans subsequently professed their great respect! What they did was to commit a flagrant violation of Article 56 of the Regulations appended to The Hague Convention, signed by Germany, which says: "The property of public bodies and of establishments consecrated to religion, to works of benevolence and education, as well as those devoted to arts and sciences, even when belonging to the State, shall be regarded as private property. Any intentional seizure, destruction, or damage of such buildings, of historic monuments, or of scientific and artistic works, is prohibited and should form the subject of proceedings.

(2) On the 17th, 18th, and 19th September the cathedral was the target at which the German gunners aimed. It was then just as easy for them to hit that object as it would have been to avoid it before, having in view the size of the mark offered by a structure which measured 150 yards long by 6 yards wide at the transept.

(*a*) Three shells hit the building during the course of the day on the 17th September. One fell on the stone gallery and the roof of the north transept; another did similar damage to the apse on the north side; a third shattered the windows of the radial chapels in the apse.

(*b*) On Friday the 18th, thirteen shells hit the cathedral, many of them in its vital parts: the great pointed windows in the south aisle, in the north transept, and in the apse are ruined, some of them being completely stripped of their ancient glass; the buttresses on the south side are mutilated in their lower courses; the beautiful pinnacles which surmount them have been beheaded partly or wholly; a large flying buttress at the angle of the apse and the north transept has been completely demolished; the stone gallery which crowns the edifice has been damaged in several new places; a winding staircase in a stone tower is destroyed, and many blocks of masonry have been hurled down upon the roofs or through the gaping windows into the building.

Twice that day, and once on the following day, it became necessary to place under shelter, in the portion of the cathedral which seemed to offer the best protection, the terror-stricken wounded on their beds of straw. In spite of these precautions, several casualties, caused by grape-shot, occurred.

(*c*) On Saturday the 19th, no fewer than sixteen shells, or eighteen if we count those which fell when the

fire was already at its height, struck the cathedral and aggravated the ravages already committed.

Words fail me to describe the terrific effect on the engines of destruction that assailed the building, and the horrors of the conflagration they brought about on the same day, at about a quarter to four in the afternoon. In less than an hour the tornado of flame had devoured all that it was possible for it to devour of the venerable monument. The work of this fatal evening can only be indicated in general terms. The beautiful fifteenth-century timber roof reinforced with strips of lead was completely destroyed; the metal, melting in the heat, overflowed the gutters, and poured down in a molten stream from the gargoyles; the graceful angel belfry with the quaint figures around it has perished; the thirteenth-century glass of the upper windows of the apse and the nave, as well as that of the great rose-window and of the gallery known as that of the Kings is terribly shattered or completely pulverized; the celebrated sculptures of the left porch, a portion of those of the central porch, and all the exquisite detail of the storeys above them are in a state of indescribable dilapidation; the ornament of the two side porches, a specimen of interior decoration, unique of its kind in France, is obliterated; all the stones of the building on a level with the upper and lower roofs are split to a great depth; great scales stand out upon them, ready to fall off at the first touch of rough weather; the eight

master bells and those of the chime are either broken or split; the woodwork and stalls (eighteenth century) of the choir; the carpet of the coronation of Charles X.; the archi-episcopal throne, seats, etc., are all in ashes.

(3) On Thursday, 24th September (the day following the fire), three more shells hit the cathedral, the second of them falling on the roof of the crossing, which had been laid bare by the fire. On Monday, the 12th October, another shell of very large calibre destroyed a length of eight yards of the heavy gallery which surrounds the apse; no such considerable damage had up till then been done by any single projectile.

In closing this rapid summary, I must note that the murder of the Cathedral is but the most odious episode of the bombardment inflicted upon Reims without the smallest justification, at the beginning of the invasion. This bombardment spared neither churches (Saint-Rémi in particular), works of art, nor hospitals.

(*Signed*) M. Landrieux,
Vicar-General, Arch-Priest.

(*Signed*) R. Thinot,
Chapel Master of the Cathedral.

No. 106

NOTE by General Rouquerol on the position of the batteries at Reims, in relation to the Cathedral.

Reims, *November* 9, 1914.

The nearest of our batteries to the Cathedral is situated at a distance of 1200 yards from this monument.

Therefore, even supposing that the battery or batteries of the enemy which continue to fire in the direction of the Cathedral are in a straight line with the Cathedral and the French battery, they should never send in the direction of the monument anything more than a few trial shots to determine the range. The German artillerymen are far too good at their work to keep up a regular fire on the Cathedral itself, when the object at which they are supposed to be aiming is 1200 yards from this monument.

On the 19th September, when the principal bombardment took place, which set fire to the outer scaffolding and accounted for nearly all the damage done, the French batteries nearest to the Cathedral were situated close beside the position above referred to, which the President of the Council has examined today.

So long as our troops remain at Reims there must be grave objections from a military point of view to stating the positions of our batteries more accurately, or to giving a sketch of the position.

(*Signed*) ROUQUEROL.

No. 107

List of the men, women, and children killed or injured by the explosion of bombs thrown upon Paris and the suburbs by German aircraft from August 30 to October 12, 1914. (*The List is taken from the report drawn up by N. Lescouvé, Public Prosecutor.*)

Bombs dropped, August 30th, rue des Vinaigriers; Rue des Récollets; Quai Valmy; Rue des Marais.

Killed. Mme. Virgine Potvin.

Wounded. Mme. Lamontagne, Mme. Blanche Meley, Mme. Harcelle.

Bomb dropped, September 1st, Rue de Moscou.

Killed. Mlle. Suzanne Boudet.

Wounded. Mme. Bigot.

Bomb dropped, September 1st, Rue Auger, Pantin.

Killed. M. Jules Bertin.

Bomb dropped, September 1st, Rue de la Condamine.

Wounded. Mme. Havez, M. Emile Luce, M. Paul Grout, M. Rachel, Mlle. Viviane Demelé, Mme. Brillaux.

Bomb dropped, September 2d, Rue des Martyrs.

Killed. M. Pierre Marceau.

Bomb dropped, September 2d, Rue d'Orchamps.

Killed. M. Edouard Prato.

Bomb dropped, September 27th, Rue Freycinet.

Killed. M. Hocquet.

Wounded. Mlle. Denise Cartier.

Bomb dropped, October 8th, Boulevard Ney.

Wounded. M. Alphonse Boulogne, Mme. Berthe Boulogne, Roger Gautier (aged two years).

Bomb dropped, October 11, Rue du Faubourg Saint-Antoine.

Killed. M. Robert Laferrière, Mlle. Nina Kahn.

Wounded. M. François Hériot, M. Charles Trum-

bert, M. Moïse Benveniste, M. Emile Brisedoux, M. Salomon Binuese, Mlle. Elisabeth Flamant, Mme. Bruxelle, Mlle. Petitjean, Mlle. Hurteaux, Mlle. Hénos, Mlle. Rossinelli, Mlle. Monkes, M. di Pavlo, Mlle. Cré.

Bomb dropped, October 11, Rue de l'Aqueduc.

Killed. M. Prosper Barrès, M. Maurice Labbé, Mme. Augustine Hoffmann.

Wounded. Mlle. Léa Baudry, M. André Beuvit, Mlle. Denise Delnucé.

CHAPTER IX

TREACHEROUS METHODS OF WARFARE

UNDERTAKINGS GIVEN BY GERMANY

IT is expressly forbidden: to kill or wound treacherously individuals belonging to the nation or army of the enemy. A belligerent is likewise forbidden to compel the subjects of the hostile party to take part in the operations of war directed against their own country.

(Extract from Article 23 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

I. French Evidence

No. 108

STATEMENT by Private Cabioch of the 321st Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the circumstances under which certain prisoners were placed in front of the German troops.

The undersigned Cabioch, Reservist of the 321st Regiment of Infantry, hereby declares that, having been made prisoner by the Germans, in company with several other soldiers, following upon a bayonet assault, he and his comrades were compelled to form part of the line of German skirmishers under the following circumstances:

"At 8 P.M. on the 13th September a considerable portion of the 4th section of the 24th Company of the 321st Regiment of Infantry Reserve was taken prisoner, during an engagement which took place about 1000 yards to the north-east of the farm of Confrécourt (3 kilometres south-west from Nouvion). Immediately afterwards several German soldiers, whose rank the witness was unable to distinguish, put the prisoners into the front line, threatening them with their revolvers.

"Firing then became brisk between the German lines and those of the French close to them. The witness having had occasion to notice that the Germans had left behind them such French prisoners as were wounded, dropped to earth after running a few yards, and pretended to be seriously wounded. Thus he remained lying on the ground, and on the following day at about 4 A.M. succeeded in returning to the French lines in company with Corporal Boutry of the same section, who had been wounded. He declares that several of his comrades fell, either killed or wounded, at the place where the Germans had put them into the front rank."

(*Signed*) JEAN CABIOCH.

The foregoing declaration has been made and signed this day by the witness in the presence of Captain Robert, undersigned, of the Staff of the 7th Army Corps.

(*Signed*) ROBERT,

Headquarters of the 7th Army Corps, at Montigny-l'Engrain, September 21st.

No. 109

DEPOSITION of four soldiers of the 216th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing how on September 20th, French prisoners were exposed to the fire of the French troops.

The undersigned: Jean Talou, Corporal in the 216th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), and Jean-Pierre Degruel, Pierre Thévenet, and Pierre Prost, Privates in the same, declare that having been made prisoners by the Germans, they and several other soldiers were forcibly placed by the Germans against their will in front of the German lines, under the following circumstances:

"On September 20th, between four and five o'clock, being in a sort of trench formed by the edge of a ditch near the farm of Confrécourt (three kilometres south-west of Novion), they were suddenly surrounded by German soldiers who made them prisoners and took them to an adjacent haystack. A few minutes after a German column of about 500 men, in formation of fours, advanced in silence, as if for the purpose of surrounding the farm. The officer at the head of this column, noticing the prisoners and their guard, ordered them briefly to advance towards the ditch whence they had come, threatening them with his revolver. The German soldiers hereupon hurried the prisoners to the edge of the ditch, which formed a parapet, put them in line in their own ranks, and opened fire upon the French

lines. Volleys were exchanged on either side, in the course of which French soldiers were struck by French bullets. Among them were the following:

"Lieutenant X . . . killed.

"Sergeant Lasablière, wounded.

"Corporals Baster and Noailly, wounded.

"The two sappers, Ravassart and Malard, wounded.

"The two soldiers Machon and Bertoix, wounded.

"The French soldiers were kept in this position until 2 P.M. when they were rescued during a counter attack by some battalions of Alpine Chasseurs."

(*Signed*) JEAN TALOU, Corporal, telephonist,
PIERRE THÉVENET,
PIERRE PROST,
JEAN-PIERRE DEGRUEL.

This deposition was made and signed this day by the witnesses, in the presence of Captain Robert, of the Staff of the 7th Army Corps.

(*Signed*) ROBERT,

Headquarters of the 7th Army Corps, at Montigny-l'Engrain, September 21st.

No. 110

EXTRACTS from report by Lieutenant-Colonel Payerne, commanding the 68th Regiment of Infantry, to the General in command of the 9th Army Corps on occurrences which took place on the front of the 68th Regiment, September 25–26, 1914.

PROSNES, *October* 5, 1914.

In compliance with the instructions contained in service order No. 1041 of the 9th Army Corps, dated 3d inst., I have the honour to forward the following supplementary information, having reference to the events which took place on the 25th and 26th September, on the front of the 1st, 3d, and 9th Companies of the 68th Regiment.

On the 25th September at about 6.30 P.M. Major Bardoller with the 1st, 3d, and 9th Companies proceeded to the assault of the German trenches opposite to his lines, 1200 yards to the north-east of Hill 98. He took them, entrenched himself on the ground, and, preceded by scouts, pushed on into the wood with the 1st and 9th Companies.

At about 7.30 P.M., after a counter-attack by the Germans, a certain number of men belonging to these French companies, and in particular to the 9th which was on our left, were made prisoners (about fifty men). The rest of the companies were brought back to hold the German trenches, where they remained till dawn without being attacked.

During the night of the 25th of September, the prisoners, who had been disarmed by the Germans, were employed in making a trench opposite to the French lines. Corporal Devergne of the 9th Company has certified to this fact. At dawn the Germans made a further attack on the front of the 9th, 1st, and 3d

Companies. In this attack they compelled the prisoners whom they had taken on the previous evening to march in front of them, forming them up in columns of fours, surrounded by the Germans in column. They were followed at a distance of about 150 yards by a line of skirmishers which, in its turn, was followed by troops in sections by fours. To this also Corporal Devergne has testified.

Moreover, he states that the men of the 1st Company opposite to which he found himself amongst the prisoners in column formation, hesitated to fire on seeing the Frenchmen. Eventually, however, they opened fire on the German columns to the right and left, whereupon the Germans, having suffered several casualties, reformed around the prisoners and fell back with them. A little later, Corporal Devergne was able to escape and to rejoin the 1st Company.

Sub-Lieutenant Terrier of the 1st Company, which was attacked by the Germans at dawn, declares that he saw the Germans threatening the prisoners with revolvers and rifles, and occasionally firing to compel them to march in front of them. Adjutant Defour, of the same company, confirms the statement of Lieutenant Terrier.

Sub-Lieutenant Gallet, of the 8th Company, was in reserve behind the 1st Company. He was sent up with his section to disengage the right of the 1st Company, which was in danger of envelopment. He made a counter-attack on the Germans, killing two officers,

whose field-glasses he brought back, and driving back the German left. He also witnessed the incident described above and confirms the two other witnesses.

On our left the German counter-attack, extending along the front held by the 1st Company to that of the 9th (Lieutenant Foujanet), was screened by French prisoners, for which reason the non-commissioned officers hesitated to open fire, and a slight rearward movement took place. This, however, was rapidly checked.

This German attack at dawn was, in fact, repulsed, thanks to the intervention of the section of the 8th Company on the right of the 1st Company, and also to the effectual, though somewhat tardy, fire of the 1st Company in the trenches.

CONCLUSIONS

The interrogatory made by me has elicited the following certain facts:

(1) The Germans forced disarmed French prisoners to work during the night of the 25th, and made them dig a trench opposite to the French trenches.

The French obeyed this order quietly (Deposition of Corporal Devergne).

(2) At daybreak, the German counter-attacking force was preceded by the French prisoners, who were threatened by the Germans with revolvers to make them advance (Deposition of Captain de Salvador, Sub-Lieutenants Terrier and Gallet, and Adjutant Dufour).

(3) None of the three or four men who escaped with Corporal Dufour are to be found among the units of the 68th Regiment. They must have been killed in the fighting of the following days.

(4) Neither Corporal Devergne nor the non-commissioned officers engaged on the 25th and 26th could give me the number of the regiment which made use of the French prisoners.

Corporal Devergne stated in an earlier report that the regiments which were opposed to the 68th were the 157th (this has been definitely ascertained) and probably the 162d and 163d. Lieutenant Foujanet has, moreover, stated in his report that he had to deal with the 4th Regiment of the Guard (Augusta Regiment).

We, the undersigned, hereby declare and certify that the facts which we have set down in the above report are the simple truth.

Signed by MAJOR SALVADOR, LIEUTENANT FOUJANET, LIEUTENANT TERRIER, SUB-LIEUTENANT GALLET, ADJUTANT DUFOUR, AND CORPORAL DEVERGNE

No. 111

REPORT forwarded by Lieutenant Aucour to the Colonel commanding the 2d Regiment of Dragoons, describing the circumstances in which a detachment of German infantry used two women as a screen on October 19, 1914, *in Belgium.*

VESTROSSBECK (BELGIUM), *October* 19, 1914.

I have the honour to inform you that at 2 P.M. on the 19th October, having taken up a position with my platoon near to a barricade which I was defending at the north-west outlet from Roulers (Belgium), there appeared before me a vanguard detachment of German infantry. This troop consisting of only seven or eight men was commanded by an officer, who was driving in front of him two women, one of whom held a baby in her arms, which she was endeavouring to protect with a red garment rolled into a bundle. For fear of hitting either of the poor women, I hesitated to open fire on these soldiers, but eventually, fearing the arrival of reinforcements, I directed certain good shots to fire independently, telling them to aim rather high. . . . This had the result of dispersing the enemy. I report this incident, to be used as may seem fit. It is probable, to judge by the prisoners whom we had taken on the previous evening, that the unit in question belonged to the 213th or 214th Regiment of Landwehr.

(*Signed*) AUCOUR.

Signed also by the following witnesses:

CHAMBET, GIRIER, METZINGER, and the rest of my platoon, POUS, LAMUY.

(*Signed*) SCHULTZ,
Colonel commanding the 2d Dragoons.

Guaranteeing the signatures of the above witnesses, all of whom belong to the regiment.

Briler, 21*st October*, 1914.
Seen and forwarded:

(*Signed*) LAPEYRIÈRE,
General commanding the 5th Brigade of Dragoons.

No. 112

REPORT of Major Hennoegen to the Major commanding the 354th Infantry Regiment, describing the manner in which certain German soldiers used women and children as a screen on September 23, 1914.

In reporting the number of officers killed and wounded in my battalion on September 23, 1914, *i. e.* :

Blondet, Lieutenant, Reserve, killed,
Champlauvier, Captain, killed,
Vignoli, Lieutenant, Reserve, wounded,
Courtois, Sub-Lieutenant, Reserve, wounded,

I wish to record a circumstance which it would be well to communicate to headquarters.

During the attack of the village of Autriche which Lieutenant Courtois had entered with his section, he saw that all the women and children of the place were put at the windows, with the Germans behind them.

Thus the Germans fired on our soldiers who were unable to return their fire.

Lieutenant Courtois was wounded under the following conditions: Arriving at a house at the corner of a street, he was stopped by several Germans who

were at the windows, and one of them called out to him in good French: "Lieutenant, surrender!" "Ground arms!" cried M. Courtois to him. At this answer he and some dozen of his men were struck down by a volley.

This is another fact which will attest the barbarity of these savages before the world.

(*Signed*) HENNOEGEN.

II. GERMAN EVIDENCE

No. 113

LETTER written by Lieutenant A. Eberlein, a Bavarian officer, and published on the 7th October 1914, in the "Vorabendblatt" of the "Münchener neuste Nachrichten."

". . . Aber drei andere Zivilisten haben wir verhaftet und da kommt mir ein guter Gedanke. Sie werden auf Stühle gesetzt und ihnen bedeutet, einen Sitzplatz mitten in der Strasse zu nehmen. Händeringen und Flehen auf der einen, ein paar Gewehrkolben auf der anderen Seite. Man wird allmählich furchtbar hart. Dann sitzen sie draussen auf der Strasse. Wie viele Stossgebete sie losgelassen, weiss ich nicht, aber ihre Hände sind die ganze Zeit kramphaft gefaltet.

"So leid sie mir tun, aber das Mittel hilft sofort.

"Das Flankenfeuer aus den Haüsern lässt sofort nach, wir können jetzt auch das gegen überliegende Haus besetzen und sind damit die Herren der Haupt-

strasse. Was sich jetzt noch auf der Strasse zeigt, wird niedergeschossen. Auch die Artillerie hat unterdessen kräftig gearbeitet, und als gegen 7 Uhr abends die Brigade zum Sturm vorrückt, um uns zu befreien, kann ich die Meldung erstatten: 'St. Dié vom Gegner frei!' Wie ich später erfuhr, hat das. . . . Reserve-Regiment, das nördlich von uns in St. Dié eindrang, ganz ähnliche Erfahrungen gemacht wie wir. Ihre vier Zivilisten, die sie ebenfalls auf die Strasse setzten, wurden von den Franzosen erschossen. Ich habe sie selbst am Krankenhaus mitten in der Strasse liegen sehen."

Oberleutnant A. EBERLEIN.

October 7, 1914.

"But we arrested three other civilians and then I had a brilliant idea. We gave them chairs, and we then ordered them to go and sit out in the middle of the street. On their part, pitiful entreaties; on ours, a few blows from the butt-end of the rifle. Little by little one becomes terribly callous at this business. At last they were all seated outside in the street. I do not know what anguished prayers they may have said, but I noticed that their hands were convulsively clasped the whole time. I pitied these fellows, but the method was immediately effective.

"The flank-fire from the houses quickly diminished, so that we were able to occupy the opposite house and

thus to dominate the principal street. Every living being who showed himself in the street was shot. The artillery on its side had done good work all this time, and when, toward seven o'clock in the evening, the brigade advanced to the assault to relieve us, I was in a position to report that Saint-Dié had been cleared of the enemy.

"Later on I learned that the regiment of reserve which entered Saint-Dié farther to the north had tried the same experiment. The four civilians whom they had compelled, in the same way, to sit out in the street, were killed by French bullets. I myself saw them lying in the middle of the street, near the hospital."

(*Signed*) A. Eberlein.
First Lieutenant.

CHAPTER X

CRUELTIES INFLICTED ON THE CIVIL POPULATION

THE UNDERTAKING GIVEN BY GERMANY

"*FAMILY honour and rights, individual life, and private property, as well as religious convictions and worship, must be respected.*"

(Article 46 of the Regulations of The Hague.)

THE DEEDS OF GERMANY

No. 114

REPORT of Lieutenant Hurel upon cruelties committed by the Germans at the attack on Pont-à-Celles.

On August 21, 1914, the 3d Platoon of the 3d Cyclist Section was defending the northern boundary of the suburb of Pont-à-Celles, facing Orbais. Lieutenant Hurel was at this boundary with a section. The Germans were setting fire to houses before debouching from Orbais. The inhabitants of this village, men, women, and children, were fleeing towards Pont-à-Celles

screaming. Dismounted cavalrymen were pursuing them and firing upon them. According to the inhabitants two men and a woman were killed. Lieutenant Hurel could not order his Chasseurs to fire, for fear of wounding the inhabitants of Orbais. He himself fired at one of the cavalrymen, which put the other Germans to flight.

AULNOYE, *August* 24, 1914.
(*Signed*) LIEUTENANT HUREL.

Transmitted according to Ministerial Instructions,
by GENERAL DE LASTOUE.

No. 115

REPORT by Col. Huguet, head of the French Military Mission attached to the British Expeditionary Force, to the General Commander-in-Chief of the French Army at Châtillon-sur-Seine concerning the murder of three civilians at Hartennes (Aisne).

FERE-EN-TARDENOIS, *September* 23, 1914.

I have the honour to forward herewith a report which has been handed to me by the English General Staff, having reference to the murder of three French civilians by Uhlans at the village of Hartennes.

"On the 2d September, 1914, a patrol of Uhlans passed through the village of Hartennes. The inhabitants had all taken refuge in the cellars of their houses. There were only three men in the village, the

rest of the population consisting entirely of women and children.

"A French patrol of Dragoons, coming up on the other side of the village, opened fire on the Uhlans, who retreated. The Uhlans made this attack their pretext for declaring that the villagers had fired at them, and they proceeded to search for such inhabitants as still remained in the village. At first they only found women and children, but eventually they discovered the legs of the three men, who had hidden in a large pipe connected with the oven of a bakery. Without further inquiry the Uhlans closed up the end of the pipe after having filled the oven with burning straw. The three Frenchmen were soon dead, asphyxiated by the smoke, and the Uhlans then pulled out their bodies. These three men were buried near the village; their names were Eugène Brehaut, Léon Coursy, and Joseph Poulain. Their relatives living in the village can be called as witnesses."

(*Signed*) J. H. Davidson, Major on the Staff of the 3d Corps

(*Signed*) A. Huguet.

No. 116

DEPOSITION of the military hospital orderly, Martin, concerning the ill-treatment of a convoy of civilian prisoners.

On April 28th, before us, Cuniac, examining magistrate at the Court of First Instance of Cahors, in our room in the Palais de Justice, attended by our clerk, the witness hereinafter named appeared at our request, and was instructed as to the facts concerning which his evidence was invited. After swearing to tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, and replying to our questions as to his name, age, status, profession, and domicile, and as to whether he was related to or a servant of the parties concerned, he made his deposition as follows:

Élie Martin, aged 27, military hospital orderly of the 7th Regiment of Infantry at Cahors, deposes:

"I was mobilized on August 2d as hospital orderly attached to the 7th Company of the 7th Regiment of the Line, and I followed this regiment to the front. On September 2d, in the course of a night-attack, I was taken prisoner near Semide, in the district of Vouziers, I think. I was captured with some other orderlies, when we were bringing in the wounded. The Germans took us along with them on their march to Châlons. The column to which we were thus attached was composed of Würtemberg regiments of various arms. Throughout this march we were kept almost entirely without food. As we passed through certain villages, I noted that requisitions were made, ostensibly for feeding the French prisoners, but the food thus obtained was distributed to the German soldiers. For thirty consecutive hours no ration was served out to us. The food we received consisted mainly of boiled rice

and black bread (Kriegsbrot). Sometimes we were tempted by hunger and thirst to attempt to pick up or gather an apple as we passed. We were invariably hurried on with kicks or blows from the butt-ends of rifles.

"When we arrived at Signi-l'Abbaye (Ardennes), we were placed with other prisoners. On this occasion our escort was changed, and as we passed between two ranks of German soldiers, many of these hustled and struck us with the butts of their rifles. To be more exact, I ought to explain that we had marched with the column that took us prisoners as far as Châlons. There we were taken to the rear under the guard of an escort. We remained four or five days at the camp of Châlons. There we were put into a little building where we were packed closely together, and they threatened to shoot us if we made the slightest noise. From Châlons we were taken to Charleroi, passing through Signi-l'Abbaye, Junéville, Rocroy, and Marienbourg. During this march, I witnessed various acts of cruelty. Thus, on September 17th, there was an old man among the many civilians sent with us, who, showing signs of exhaustion, fell out from the column, and dropped into the ditch beside the road. Scarcely had I seen him fall when I heard a report. I looked round and saw a German soldier rejoining the column. This man had no doubt shot the old man. This happened near Signi-l'Abbaye.

"Some time before, on September 13th, if I remember rightly, I saw twenty-three civilians, all old, who had been marked on the back the day before with a cross in white chalk, detached from the column. These men were taken up on a mound during a halt and were all shot by a volley about thirty yards from us. We must have been near Normans at the time. I never knew why these persons had been executed in this fashion. At Charleroi, or rather at a little station near this town, we had been put into a train composed of cattle-trucks, which took three days to get us to the camp at Alten-Grabow. We were so crowded in the trucks that it was impossible to lie down. Once a day only during the journey we received a small ration of boiled rice or black bread. Among us there were several wounded, some seriously injured. No doctor appeared. When possible, we would sit down on the floor of the truck, for there was no straw.

"At the camp of Alten-Grabow we were at first interned for a fortnight in a wooden stable, where we were allowed a few straw mattresses and blankets. Later we were lodged in wooden sheds. During my imprisonment I and my comrades were employed to tend the wounded. Those who could work were made to dig potatoes, to drain fields, or to draw ploughs, to which they were harnessed like beasts of burden. Our food was always abominable and insufficient. In the morning, a bitter mixture they called coffee was served

out; at noon the ration was generally boiled beetroot, and sometimes boiled rice; in the evening, a little hot water in which floated a few pieces of potato, or a lumpy porridge made of damaged bran. I never saw a scrap of meat, for I cannot call the very rare bits of bacon that sometimes appeared in the bran porridge—meat. For drink we had water which, however, I never touched. The slightest complaint was punished by a turn either at the ditch or the post. I never saw the so-called ditch. It appears that it was a hole about the depth of a man's height, and about a yard wide, and in this the prisoner was made to stand for several hours. The man condemned to the post was tied, either standing or kneeling to a stake in an exposed place, and left in this position for two or three hours, in frost or in sun.

"Among us was an old man of certainly not less than seventy-five. He told us that he had been a prisoner at this same camp of Alten-Grabow in 1870. This man was too feeble to work, and as a punishment for this, he was one day tied to the post. After two or three hours of this torture had been inflicted on him, only a few steps away from me, I saw him die of exhaustion. The wounded among us were attended only by French or Belgian surgeons. We used to carry them to a special shed and after they had been seen we carried them back to their own sheds. They got just the same ration as the rest of us. As a result of this bad food

there were a great many cases of gastric disease and dysentery. The men naturally suffered from obstinate constipation. I personally remained in this camp for about a month and a half.

"On October 22d, if I remember rightly, several of us hospital orderlies were collected together to go to Magdeburg en route for Switzerland, under the direction of French surgeons, and guarded by German soldiers. Throughout this journey, which we made in ordinary passenger trains, we were treated very well. As if to efface the recollections of our internment, we were taken to the buffets of all the principal railway stations, and during our journey, we received an abundance of food, consisting moreover mainly of sausages and other delicacies. In the camp of Alten-Grabow, we were mixed with Belgian, Russian, and English prisoners, and also with a number of French and Belgian civilians. One day I saw a convoy of 500 civilians arrive, composed exclusively of men of all ages. There were some of fourteen and others of eighty. I noticed that the English were always the worst treated. But indeed from the beginning of my captivity and throughout our march on French territory, I remarked that the English prisoners were the objects of quite special brutality.

"I may add that once on this march, at Junéville, we were made to help in the transport of German munitions."

The witness confirms the above after having it read over to him.

(*Signed*) MARTIN.

(*Signed*) CUNIAC.

No. 117

REPORT of the ill-treatment of certain old men of Champguyon (Marne) who were taken to Germany as prisoners.

April 2, 1915, 11.30 A.M.

We the undersigned, Henri-Georges Petiot, Police-Sergeant, and Appolon-Alexis Charlot, mounted Police Officer at the station of Epernay (Marne), wearing our uniform and under orders from our superior officers, being informed of the return of M. Alexandre Laplaigé, agriculturist, aged 66, to his home at Champguyon (Marne), after six months internment in Germany as a civilian prisoner, interrogated him and took down the following deposition:

On September 6, 1914, at 8 P.M., when I was returning to my house, after spending the day in the woods, I was surprised by German soldiers, who took me off to an artillery park near the village. I spent the night in their camp with my hands bound; Messrs. Loir and Maricot of Champguyon were with me. The soldiers threatened several times to shoot us.

After marching for four days we arrived at Chauny, where we remained for four days. We were then sent on to Germany by train.

I was interned at the camp of Sennelager till January 26th, and then at the camp of Holzminden.

I left Holzminden on March 1st for Rastadt, arriving there on the 3d. Our release had been arranged and on the 13th I took the train to return to France, *viâ* Switzerland.

I arrived at Saint-Jodard (Loire) on March 15th, and on the 24th I was able to get a train for home, where I arrived on March 27th.

During my detention in Germany I was not given any work to do, nor was I ill-treated. We were badly fed; the bread in particular was very bad, and also insufficient: we received 350 grammes of bad bread daily, coffee in the morning, vegetable soup at noon, and in the evening boiled rice or pearl barley. I never had any meat during my captivity.

We slept in wooden sheds on straw which was never changed, and were devoured by vermin.

I received letters pretty regularly.

Those who had money were allowed to buy bread and honey.

The bad and insufficient food did not make me ill; but I lost ten kilogrammes in weight.

M. Laplaige, a robust man, bore his privations easily; his *morale* has not suffered.

The commune of Champguyon was one of those which suffered most; twenty houses were burnt by the Germans; three men were shot; four civilians were

taken prisoners to Germany; one of them died in captivity.

Two copies of the above made, one sent to the Provost-Colonel of the 5th Army, the other to the Chief of Police of the district.

(*Signed*) PETIOT.

(*Signed*) CHARLOT.

No. 118

EXTRACT from a report by Brigadier Faucheur, commanding the Brigade at Fresnes, having reference to the proceedings of the German troops at Fresnes.

On the 9th September, 1914, the Brigade at Fresnes fell back on Haudiomont before the German invasion. On the 15th of the same month, the enemy having withdrawn, the brigade returned to its quarters.

On the day on which the brigade withdrew, the enemy shot M. François Hubert Basse, Municipal Councillor, acting as Mayor of Fresnes, together with his son Hubert Basse, and the house in which they lived was burned. The wife of M. Basse, Junior, and Madame Levieux, widow, after having been ill-treated, were thrown into the fire, where they perished. The Town Hall, the Girls' School, and fifty other buildings were given over to the flames, and completely destroyed. Fifty-eight families lived in these houses. All their

valuables, as well as a large quantity of linen and furniture, were stolen by the Germans, who loaded up their plunder upon motor-cars and carried it away in the direction of Marchéville.

(*Signed*) FAUCHEUR.

No. 119

EVIDENCE as to crimes committed by the Germans at Sainte-Barbe (Vosges).

A

I, the undersigned, Marie Denis, wife of Edouard Leroy, hereby state and declare that on the 26th August, 1914, at about 7.30 A.M., four German soldiers made their appearance in front of our barn. As the door was not opened quickly enough to please them, they kicked it open, after which one of them struck a match and set fire to a heap of straw, whereby the entire premises were destroyed.

I swear to the absolute truth of this statement.

MARIE DENIS,

SAINTE-BARBE, *September* 30, 1914.

B

We, the undersigned, Jean Baptiste, Thiébaut, rural watchman; Marie Colin, wife of the said Thiébaut; Delphine Mary, wife of Charles Thiébaut, and Célestin Haite, do certify that on the 26th September, 1914,

some German soldiers entered the barn of the house of our aunt, Rosalie Haite, a paralysed woman, who lay in bed on the first floor. After taking us by the arms and compelling us to leave the house, one of the soldiers lit a match and set fire to six or seven bundles of straw. We tried to go back to save our aunt, asking their permission to do so, and telling them that she was lying ill on the first floor. But they refused to listen and pushed us roughly away. Thus our unfortunate aunt was burned alive under our very eyes, without our being allowed to render her any assistance.

We swear to the absolute truth of this declaration. Sainte-Barbe, 2d October, 1914.

JEAN-BAPTISTE THIÉBAULT,
CELESTIN HAITE, D. MARY,
M. COLIN.

No. 120

REPORT of General Espérey, commanding the 5th Army, on breaches of international law committed by the Germans at Chivy (Aisne).

HEADQUARTERS OF THE 5TH ARMY,
November 3, 1914.

I have the honour to submit to you the *précis* made by Lieutenant-Colonel Daugan, commanding the 4th Tirailleurs, of information received by him concerning acts committed by the Germans when they occupied

the village of Chivy. The following persons can bear witness to these acts:

(1) Madame Coulon, born Grouzelles, a native of Paissy, whose husband rejoined the 29th Artillery at Laon, as a Territorial, on the mobilization; her father, the said Grouzelles, a shepherd at Paissy, is still living.

(2) Madame Coulon's young daughter, aged 14.

(3) Two little boys, one aged 11, the other 4.

This family was settled at Chivy when war was declared. M. Coulon was a farmer, and Mayor of the village.

During their sojourn at Chivy, the Germans showed a marked anxiety to make the children talk; some of the soldiers spoke French fairly well. The inhabitants were not molested much in September, but they had to submit to the pillage of anything the enemy chose to take; the Germans would not wait till doors were opened for them, but broke them in with the butt-ends of their rifles or any handy implement.

During their stay from September 24th to 28th, they arrested a young man of twenty, one Fernand Berger, of Chivy, forced him to put on a German uniform, and carried him off to the quarries at Cerny. On the evening of the 28th, after they had been driven out of Chivy, by the English (after September 23d, that is to say), they forced him to return to Chivy, accompanied by another young man, of Cerny, whose father was

taken as hostage, to answer with his life for the return of the two young men, and the faithful execution of their mission, which was to reconnoitre the English troops occupying the village, and report on them at Cerny. But when Fernand Berger and his companion arrived at Chivy, they fled to the English lines, accompanied by the elder Berger, who feared that he too might be held to account for the disappearance of his son.

Another youth of sixteen, Adrien Dumons of Chivy, who was taken away by the Germans at the beginning of their occupation had not reappeared when Madame Coulon left the district (October 9th).

He was a farm-labourer, a native of Braye, working for one Polet of Chivy. He is small and slight and pale; the colour of his hair Madame Coulon does not remember (probably brown).

On the morning of the 8th, the Germans reappeared in the village of Chivy, and during this day they made no very hostile demonstrations, but at four o'clock on the morning of the 9th, they suddenly broke open certain doors in their usual manner, and arrested eighteen persons at random. Some of these being old or infirm and unable to walk quickly were struck with the butt-ends of rifles and carried off towards the Paradis woods.

The hostages were:

The Roussy family: Théophile Roussy, the father, 59, his wife, and their children, Raymond, aged 18, Marcel, aged 15, André, aged 12, Emile, aged 6; M.

Pelletier, aged 76; M. Gouder, aged 50, and Madame Gouder; M. Archer, aged 50, and Madame Archer; M. Eloy, aged 55, and Madame Eloy and their daughter, aged 17; M. Laplace, aged 76; M. Villani, aged 75; Madame Lesieur, aged 60; Madame Conne, aged 62.

The other inhabitants of Chivy then decided to flee to the French lines, and twenty-two of them appeared in the afternoon of the 9th in the English lines. The English sent them to Courcelles near Braine; whence Madame Coulon and her children got to Paissy, where she is living with her father, M. Grouzelles, shepherd at the farm of one Gros. Madame Coulon has been at Paissy since October 11th.

(*Signed*) D'ESPÉREY,
General commanding the 5th Army.

By order—For the Chief of the Staff,
GIRARD,
Chief of the 2d Bureau.

No. 121

DEPOSITION of Private Guilluy describing the severities which he witnessed or endured at Liévin, and afterwards on board the "Amiral Gantheaume."

I was born at Liévin, Canton of Lens (Pas-de-Calais), where I and my father were both miners. On the day of the mobilization I was at Liévin. One of my brothers, Jean, aged twenty-four, left on the second day

of the mobilization and my other brother, Aimé, aged twenty-nine, left on the third day. The mines stopped working. The Germans, a few of whom arrived at Lens before the battle of Bapaume, made a requisition. No violence was offered; we went to look at them out of curiosity. After the battle of the Marne they took up a position west of Douai, where French troops (Turcos, cyclists, and artillerymen) also arrived in small numbers.

About September 30th, the Germans advanced on the north-west of Douai, and every day they gained a mile or two. On October 2d or 3d they arrived at Liévin. As they were seizing all males from sixteen to sixty, my father told me to fly. I escaped with about twenty comrades, taking advantage of the darkness at 3 A.M. on October 3d. We fell in with a German cavalry patrol on the highway, and they made us turn back; they forced us to march for two days towards the north, without food of any kind, so that we were exhausted. On the third day, we were taken towards the firing line, and when we arrived at the outskirts of a wood where there was a bridge, they lined us up along the parapet. We were thus exposed to the fire of both Germans and French. The Germans were trying to take the wood, which the French were defending, and as they fired at the enemy, the French troops hit us. A number of my companions fell. I, with two others close to me, managed to slip away under the bridge. The struggle went on, the French losing ground a little; three or

four French shells blew up the bridge, which buried all three of us beneath its fragments. We managed to free ourselves, and crawled along the ground for about a hundred yards, but the Germans saw us, and fired upon us both with rifles and machine-guns. My two comrades were wounded in the legs; nevertheless, helping one another, we crawled on for another 200 yards, where we found two women who rescued us. We were able to get to the French lines, and my two companions were admitted to a hospital. I remained three weeks in the trenches with the soldiers of the 17th Regiment of Infantry, firing with them. I dressed myself in the uniform of French soldiers who had been killed.

Three weeks later, the French commandant ordered all stragglers not belonging to the district (Nœux-les-Mines, Pas-de-Calais) to retire to Calais. Certain refugees from neighbouring places occupied by the Germans were indeed often tempted to return to their homes. The enemy allowed them to do so, took one member of a family as hostage, and then forced them to give information about the French troops.

On October 25th, we arrived at Calais about midnight. The next day we left the harbour at two o'clock P.M. on the *Amiral Gantheaume*. An hour and a half later, about three miles from Boulogne-sur-Mer we were torpedoed by a German submarine. We saw the torpedo coming, and the explosion followed a second after. The captain sounded the siren and tried to stop up

the holes, but the ship settled down in a quarter of an hour to a depth of about ten feet. We numbered about 2500 Belgian and French refugees. Happily, an English ship came to the rescue and took us off. We were landed at Folkestone, and then sent on to London, where we were taken in at the "Alexandra Palace." After twelve days here we were sent back by way of La Rochelle, whence we went on to Ariége. I was very kindly received by some worthy people who nursed me with great devotion, for after all these adventures, I was in a poor state of health. When I got well, I enlisted for four years at Saint-Gaudens, and was drafted into the 18th Regiment of Infantry at Pau.

Camp of Ger, *February* 9, 1915.

(*Signed*) Raymond Guilluy.

Private Raymond Guilluy, after hearing his statement read over, declared that it contained the truth, and that he confirmed it, and signed together with us, Theodore Heid commanding the detachment of the 18th Regiment of Infantry, and de Hoym de Marien, Major, commanding the camp at Ger, on the date given above.

Raymond Guilluy.

Major de Hoym de Marien,
Commandant at Ger.

Lieutenant Théodore Heid,
Commanding the detachment
of the 18th Regiment
of Infantry.

THE END

A Selection from the Catalogue of

G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS

Complete Catalogues sent on application

The Evidence in the Case

A Discussion of the Moral Responsibility for the War of 1914, as Disclosed by the Diplomatic Records of England, Germany, Russia, France and Belgium

By

JAMES M. BECK, LL.D.

Late Assistant Attorney-General of the U. S.

With an Introduction by

The Hon. JOSEPH H. CHOATE

Late U. S. Ambassador to Great Britain

7th Printing—Revised Edition with much Additional Material

12°. Over 280 pages. $1.00 net

"Mr. Beck's book is so extremely interesting from beginning to end that it is difficult when once begun to lay it down and break off the reading, and we are not surprised to hear not only that it has had an immense sale in England and America, but that its translation into the languages of the other nations of Europe has been demanded."—*Hon. Joseph H. Choate in The New York Times.*

New York **G. P. Putnam's Sons** London

Treitschke

12°. $1.50

The Writings of Bernhardi's Teacher, Heinrich von Treitschke, Together with a Life, by His Close Friend, Adolf Hausrath

The works of this great German historian have shaped the present policy of Germany in its attempt to secure a dominating influence in Europe and throughout the world. The following is a brief summary of the subjects presented in this distinctive work :

1. Treitschke's Life and Work, by Adolf Hausrath. 2. The Army. 3. International Law. 4. German Colonization. 5. The Two Emperors. 6. In Memory of the Great War. 7. Germany and the Neutral States. 8. Austria and the German Emperor. 9. Russia from the German Point of View. 10. On Liberty.

Treitschke was a close friend of Bismarck, and his list of pupils include the political and military leaders of the present generation, such as the Emperor William, Bernhardi, and others.

Lord Acton says of Treitschke: "He is the one writer of history who is more brilliant and more powerful than Droysen; and he writes with the force and incisiveness of Mommsen, but he concerns himself with the problems of the present day, problems that are still demanding solution."

New York **G. P. Putnam's Sons** London

Germany, France, Russia and Islam

By Heinrich von Treitschke

A series of essays, now translated for the first time, by the great German historian, friend of Bismarck and teacher of William II and Bernhardi. His works have shaped the present policy of Germany in its attempt to secure a dominating influence in Europe and throughout the world.

The Origins of the War

By J. Holland Rose, Litt.D.

Fellow of Christ's College and Reader in Modern History in the University of Cambridge, Corresponding Member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Author of "Development of the European Nations," "The Personality of Napoleon."

In this volume the author traces the course of the political developments out of which the present war has arisen, the subject being treated under the following headings: "Anglo-German Rivalry" (1875–1888), "The Kaiser," "Germany's World-Policy," "Morocco," "The Bagdad Railway," "Alsace-Lorraine," "The Eastern Question (1908–1913)," "The Crisis of 1914," "The Rupture."

Can Germany Win?

By "An American"

The author of this illuminating work has spent many years in a careful study of economic conditions in Germany and his findings bear the stamp of authority.

New York **G. P. Putnam's Sons** London

The Real "Truth About Germany"

From the English Point of View

By Douglas Sladen

Author of "Egypt and the English," etc.

With an Appendix

Great Britain and the War

By A. Maurice Low, M.A.

Author of "The American People," etc.

300 pages, 12°, Cloth, $1.00

Mr. Sladen has taken as his text a pamphlet which, while not formally published, has been widely circulated in the United States, entitled *The Truth About Germany.* This pamphlet was prepared in Germany under the supervision of a Committee of Representative Germans, and may fairly be described as the "official justification of the War." Care has been taken to prevent copies from finding their way into England, which has caused Mr. Sladen to describe the pamphlet as *The Secret White Paper.* He has taken up one by one the statements of the German writers, and has shown how little foundation most of these statements have and how misleading are others which contain some element of truth. In answering the German statements, Mr. Sladen has naturally taken the opportunity to state clearly the case of England. England claims that it was impossible to avoid going into this struggle if it was to keep faith with and fulfill its obligations to Belgium and Luxemburg. Apart from this duty, it is the conviction of England, that it is fighting not only in fulfillment of obligations and to prevent France from being crushed for a second time, but for self-preservation. The German threat has been made openly "first Paris, then London."

In order that the case for England may be complete, the publishers have added an essay by the well-known historian, A. Maurice Low. As the title, *Great Britain and the War,* indicates, England's attitude toward the great conflict is clearly portrayed, and her reasons for joining therein are ably presented.

New York **G. P. Putnam's Sons** London

D626 .G3F81
Germany's violations of the laws of war
Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library
1 1012 00001 1926